

IN THE UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT  
FOR THE DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,	)	
	)	
Plaintiff,	)	
	)	
-vs-	)	No. 99-CV-02496 (GK)
	)	
PHILIP MORRIS, INC., et al.,	)	
	)	
Defendants.	)	

THE VIDEOTAPE DEPOSITION OF KENNETH LUDMERER, produced, sworn and examined on behalf of the Plaintiff, pursuant to Notice, on Wednesday, August 7, and Thursday, August 8, 2002, at the Office of the United States Attorney, 400 in the City of Kansas City, in the County of Jackson and State of Missouri, before me,

ALISON A. TRACY, RPR, CCR #554  
of  
JOHN M. BOWEN & ASSOCIATES  
Court Reporters,

a Notary Public, Registered Professional Reporter and Certified Court Reporter, in a certain cause now pending in the United States District Court for the District of Columbia, wherein UNITED STATES OF AMERICA is Plaintiff and PHILIP MORRIS, INC., et al., are Defendant.

A p p e a r a n c e s

For the Plaintiff:	U.S. Department of Justice Civil Division 1331 Pennsylvania Ave. N.W. Suite 1150-20 Washington, D.C. 20004 By: Ms. Mary Jo Moltzen Ms. Noelle M. Kurtin
--------------------	---

For the Defendant Lorillard:	Shook, Hardy & Bacon One Kansas City Place 1200 Main Street Kansas City, Missouri 64105 By: Mr. David M. Woods
---------------------------------	--

Page 2

1 For the Defendant  
Philip Morris: Hunton & Williams  
1751 Pinnacle Drive  
Suite 1700  
McLean, Virginia 22102  
By: Mr. Daniel C. Jordan

2  
3  
4 Also Present: Ms. Chris Walker-Byerley  
Shook, Hardy & Bacon

5  
6 Video Operator: Mr. Brent Christopher  
Christopher Video  
4024 State Line Road  
Kansas City, Kansas 66130

7  
8  
9  
10 INDEX

11  
12  
13  
14 WITNESS: Kenneth Ludmerer

15  
16 Direct Examination by Ms. Moltzen 4

17 August 8, 2002 Session 250

18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

Page 4

09:23 1 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Today's date is  
09:23 2 August 7, 2002. The time is 9:18 AM. This is the  
09:23 3 deposition of Kenneth Ludmerer. My name is Brent  
09:23 4 Christopher from Christopher Video. The court  
09:23 5 reporter is Alison Tracy from John Bowen &  
09:23 6 Associates. The case caption is United States of  
09:23 7 America versus Philip Morris, Inc., et al. Civil  
09:23 8 Action No. 99-CV-02496. Counsel please state  
09:23 9 their appearances for the record.  
09:23 10 MS. MOLTZEN: Mary Jo Moltzen  
09:23 11 representing the United States.  
12 MS. KURTIN: Noelle Kurtin for the United  
09:23 13 States.  
09:23 14 MR. WOODS: This is David Woods with  
09:23 15 Shook, Hardy & Bacon in Kansas City for Lorillard  
09:23 16 Tobacco Company.  
09:23 17 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: please swear the  
09:23 18 witness.  
19 KENNETH LUDMERER,  
20 the Witness of lawful age, being produced, sworn and  
21 examined on behalf of the Plaintiff, depose and  
22 saith:  
23 DIRECT EXAMINATION  
24 BY MS. MOLTZEN:  
09:23 25 Q Dr. Ludmerer, would you please state your

Page 3

1 EXHIBITS

EXHIBIT NO.	PAGE
1 - Notice of Deposition	25
2 - Expert Report of Dr. Ludmerer	26
3 - CV of Dr. Ludmerer	27
4 - Joint Defendants' expert disclosure for Kenneth Ludmerer	30
5 - List of deposition and trial testimony	31
6 - Updated CV of Dr. Ludmerer	28
7 - Handwritten notes	103
8 - References	112
9 - Handwritten Paradigm	117
10 - Paradigm	119
11 - Supplemental Bibliography	125
12 - Additional Bibliography	128
13 - Smoking and Health, Report of the Advisory Committee to the Surgeon General	129
14 - Report on Visit to U.S.A. and Canada 17th April - 12th May 1958	208
15 - A Frank Statement to Cigarette Smokers	221

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

Page 5

09:24 1 business address for the record.  
09:24 2 A Washington University, Department of Medicine, 660  
09:24 3 South Euclid Avenue, Campus Box 8066, St. Louis,  
09:24 4 Missouri 63110.  
09:24 5 Q Have you ever been deposed before?  
09:24 6 A Yes, I have.  
09:24 7 Q This deposition is being conducted pursuant to the  
09:24 8 Federal Rules of Civil Procedure and the case  
09:24 9 management orders issued in this case. But it is  
09:24 10 important for the record that I give you some  
09:24 11 basic instructions which you have probably heard  
09:24 12 before and ask you some basic questions. You were  
09:24 13 given an oath at the beginning of the deposition.  
09:24 14 Do you understand that the answers you provide  
09:24 15 today are the same as if these answers were given  
09:24 16 to a judge in a courtroom?  
09:24 17 A Yes, I do.  
09:24 18 Q I'm going to ask you a series of questions. It is  
09:24 19 important that you understand my question before  
09:24 20 you begin to answer. So if you do not understand  
09:24 21 a question, you will ask for clarification, is  
09:24 22 that agreed to?  
09:25 23 A Yes.  
09:25 24 Q The court reporter will be taking down your  
09:25 25 answers to my questions. For that reason you must

Page 6

09:25 1 provide clear, verbal answers, no nods, shrugs,  
09:25 2 uh-huhs or huh-uhs. Is that agreed to?  
09:25 3 A Yes, it is.  
09:25 4 Q I will try to ask clear, concise questions today.  
09:25 5 But if you are confused in any way, please let me  
09:25 6 know. Is that understood?  
09:25 7 A Yes, it is.  
09:25 8 Q If you don't hear any part of a question, please  
09:25 9 ask that it be repeated. Is that agreed to?  
09:25 10 A Yes.  
09:25 11 Q If you do not ask a question -- to have a question  
09:25 12 clarified or repeated, I will assume that you  
09:25 13 heard and understood the question. Is that  
09:25 14 understood?  
09:25 15 A Yes, it is.  
09:25 16 Q It is important that you allow me to finish my  
09:25 17 question before you start to answer, and that I  
09:25 18 allow you to complete your answer before I begin  
09:25 19 my next question. Do you understand?  
09:25 20 A Yes.  
09:25 21 Q And the court reporter will let us know if we need  
09:25 22 to slow down or if for any reason she is having  
09:25 23 difficulty with hearing us. According to order  
09:25 24 number 150 in this case, I am to give you the  
09:26 25 following instruction at the beginning of this

Page 7

09:26 1 deposition. You must ask me rather than your own  
09:26 2 counsel for clarifications, definitions or  
09:26 3 explanations of any words, questions or documents  
09:26 4 presented during the course of this deposition.  
09:26 5 You are to address your inquiries regarding  
09:26 6 clarifications to me. If you need to take a break  
09:26 7 for any reason or if you just get tired, will you  
09:26 8 tell me?  
09:26 9 A Yes.  
09:26 10 Q There is one exception to that, there can be no  
09:26 11 break or recess between a question and a pending  
09:26 12 answer.  
09:26 13 A Understood.  
09:26 14 Q Have you taken any drugs or medication which might  
09:26 15 affect your ability to answer questions today?  
09:26 16 A No, I have not.  
09:26 17 Q Do you have any medical conditions or problems  
09:26 18 which might affect your ability to answer  
09:26 19 questions today?  
09:26 20 A None that I'm aware of.  
09:26 21 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record.  
09:26 22 The time is 9:22 AM.  
09:26 23 (Short recess was taken.)  
09:28 24 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: We are back on the  
09:29 25 record. The time is 9:24 AM.

Page 8

09:29 1 MS. MOLTZEN: Could you introduce  
09:29 2 yourself, please.  
09:29 3 MR. JORDAN: Dan Jordan with Hunton &  
09:29 4 Williams here on behalf of Philip Morris.  
09:29 5 MS. MOLTZEN: Mr. Jordan just entered  
09:29 6 the room so he missed the preliminaries. Would  
09:29 7 you introduce yourself please?  
09:29 8 MS. WALKER-BYERLEY: Chris Walker-Byerley  
09:29 9 with Shook, Hardy & Bacon.  
09:29 10 Q One more question in those preliminaries. Is  
09:29 11 there anything else that might impair your ability  
09:29 12 to recall or tell the truth?  
09:29 13 A None that I'm aware of. May I ask you a  
09:29 14 procedural question?  
09:29 15 Q Absolutely?  
09:29 16 A Actually two. I appreciate your going through the  
09:29 17 guidelines as you have. Having given seven or  
09:29 18 eight depositions in the course of my involvement  
09:29 19 over 15 years, the instructions that you have  
09:29 20 given in general are familiar and what I expected.  
09:29 21 Two specific questions. Are there any rules,  
09:29 22 procedures, ways of doing things that are  
09:30 23 different because this is a deposition in federal  
09:30 24 court with the U.S. Government as opposed to a  
09:30 25 civil court? As I recall previous depositions --

Page 9

09:30 1 I believe this is the first federal deposition,  
09:30 2 U.S. deposition that I have been involved with.  
09:30 3 Is there anything different that I should be aware  
09:30 4 of?  
09:30 5 Q I have never taken a deposition in state court so  
09:30 6 I can't answer that. I'm sure there are some  
09:30 7 small technical differences but I can't think of  
09:30 8 any?  
09:30 9 A Essentially the rules are the same. What you  
09:30 10 recounted now is what I was anticipating the  
09:30 11 guidelines would be. And my second question, I do  
09:30 12 not recall a previous video deposition. Are there  
09:30 13 any rules or procedures for you as well as for me  
09:30 14 that are different because this is being  
09:30 15 videotaped?  
09:30 16 Q No, there are not.  
09:30 17 A Thank you for that clarification.  
09:30 18 Q You're welcome. Dr. Ludmerer, in what field of  
09:31 19 expertise are you offering your opinions as an  
09:31 20 expert in this case?  
09:31 21 A As a historian in medicine dealing with the  
09:31 22 historical issue of how we came to our current  
09:31 23 understanding that cigarette smoking causes lung  
09:31 24 cancer.  
09:31 25 Q Is the association between cigarette smoking and

Page 10

09:31 1 lung cancer the only disease that you will be  
 09:31 2 offering opinions about?  
 09:31 3 A I'm not entirely certain what opinions, if any, I  
 09:31 4 will be offering. I don't know if I will be asked  
 09:31 5 to testify and, if so, what the nature of that  
 09:31 6 will be. The focus of my research and opinions  
 09:31 7 does deal with the issue of lung cancer  
 09:31 8 specifically and cigarette smoking. On the other  
 09:31 9 hand, the studies, particularly the magnificent  
 09:32 10 prospective trials of the fifties and sixties  
 09:32 11 which really became the basis of our current  
 09:32 12 understanding that cigarette smoking causes lung  
 09:32 13 cancer did demonstrate that cigarette smoking  
 09:32 14 either caused or was associated with many other  
 09:32 15 diseases as well. And the Surgeon General's  
 09:32 16 report which what I reviewed as part of my study  
 09:32 17 discusses other diseases as well.  
 09:32 18 So I think it would be fair to say that  
 09:32 19 cigarette smoking and health from the scientific  
 09:32 20 standpoint would be the focus of my testimony with  
 09:32 21 a great emphasis on lung cancer, but it wouldn't  
 09:32 22 surprise me if I were asked to make some comments  
 09:32 23 on other illnesses as well. The focus is on  
 09:32 24 cancer. I do want to make that point.  
 09:32 25 Q Will you be offering opinions about cigarette

Page 11

09:32 1 smoking and emphysema?  
 09:32 2 A Again I don't know what I will be asked to discuss  
 09:33 3 or not.  
 09:33 4 Q Let me ask that in a different way then. Do you  
 09:33 5 consider yourself an expert in the field of  
 09:33 6 medical history and smoking as it relates to  
 09:33 7 emphysema?  
 09:33 8 A I would say that I would consider my expertise  
 09:33 9 smoking as it relates to lung cancer, that has  
 09:33 10 always been the focus, not other diseases.  
 09:33 11 Q That is all true then for cardiovascular disease?  
 09:33 12 A That's correct.  
 09:33 13 Q That is also true for COPD, chronic obstructive  
 09:33 14 pulmonary disease?  
 09:33 15 A That's correct. The focus of my study all along,  
 09:33 16 my testimony if asked to testify is on cigarette  
 09:33 17 smoking and lung cancer, and not these other  
 09:33 18 conditions that you are mentioning.  
 09:33 19 Q I'm going to ask one more. Nicotine addiction?  
 09:33 20 A I'm not addressing that issue at all.  
 09:33 21 Q What is the value of the history of medicine as a  
 09:34 22 science or discipline?  
 09:34 23 MR. WOODS: Objection.  
 09:34 24 A Could you clarify that? The value? That's a  
 09:34 25 broad -- I'm not trying to knit pick your

Page 12

09:34 1 question. Perhaps you could help me a bit with  
 09:34 2 that.  
 09:34 3 Q This is a general, this is not specific to this  
 09:34 4 case, but in a general overview how does the  
 09:34 5 historian of medicine help us reach scholarly  
 09:34 6 goals?  
 09:34 7 MR. WOODS: Objection.  
 09:34 8 A Are you asking how the historian of medicine goes  
 09:34 9 about the task of doing history, what can be  
 09:34 10 learned from history of medicine?  
 09:34 11 Q That's my next question. I just wanted to -- we  
 09:34 12 will move on to that then if this is unanswerable.  
 09:34 13 In this particular area, the history of medicine,  
 09:34 14 is it important that the historian also be a  
 09:35 15 medical doctor?  
 09:35 16 A In this particular area? In my opinion no. I  
 09:35 17 think a good historian of medicine is a good  
 09:35 18 historian of medicine. Some historians of  
 09:35 19 medicine do have medical as well as historical  
 09:35 20 training as I do. There are certain topics in the  
 09:35 21 history of medicine or the history of science in  
 09:35 22 general that definitely do benefit, in my  
 09:35 23 judgment, by a person who is intimately familiar  
 09:35 24 with the science and the internal concepts of that  
 09:35 25 field. But insofar as we are talking about this

Page 13

09:35 1 particular case and the historical evolution of  
 09:35 2 our understanding that cigarette smoking causes  
 09:35 3 lung cancer, it is not like reading this week's  
 09:35 4 New England Journal of Medicine, Journal of  
 09:36 5 Biochemistry. I think that a well-trained  
 09:36 6 historian without medical qualifications certainly  
 09:36 7 is qualified to do study in this area to speak on  
 09:36 8 that. It would not require a medical background  
 09:36 9 in my opinion.  
 09:36 10 Q Who do you consider to be some other authorities  
 09:36 11 in this field of expertise that you are going to  
 09:36 12 be testifying on today?  
 09:36 13 A In the history of medicine in general?  
 09:36 14 Q Let's start there, a couple of names from the  
 09:36 15 history of medicine in general.  
 09:36 16 A The history of medicine is a large field so there  
 09:36 17 are many fine historians of medicine, most of whom  
 09:36 18 do not have MD degrees, apropos to your earlier  
 09:36 19 question. Some of the leading historians of  
 09:36 20 medicine today in my judgment, and this list is  
 09:37 21 suggestive, not totally inclusive, but Charles  
 09:37 22 Rosenberg, Barbara Rosenkrantz, Daniel Fox, Rose  
 09:37 23 Mary Stephens, Judy Levitt, Juan Numbers, Gert  
 09:37 24 Breeger. These would be examples of individuals  
 09:37 25 who are very eminent figures in the history of

Page 14

09:37 1 medicine. Gert Breeger has an MD degree in  
 09:37 2 addition to a Ph.D degree. The other individuals  
 09:37 3 that I mentioned are peer Ph.D historians and in  
 09:37 4 my judgment they are all outstanding scholars.  
 09:37 5 **Q That was my general question. Now a more specific**  
 09:37 6 **question. Who else do you generally considered**  
 09:37 7 **authoritative in the field of the history of**  
 09:37 8 **medicine as it pertains to smoke smoking and lung**  
 09:37 9 **cancer?**  
 09:37 10 **A Well, a number of people have written on this and**  
 09:38 11 **I have not reviewed for this deposition all of the**  
 09:38 12 **secondary sources that I read back in the late**  
 09:38 13 **eighties or early nineties when I did my research.**  
 09:38 14 **There have been a number of important books and**  
 09:38 15 **articles that I remember was in them, not**  
 09:38 16 **necessarily who wrote them.**  
 09:38 17 **But from my perspective some of the best**  
 09:38 18 **historical work by contemporary workers has**  
 09:38 19 **included work by John Burnham, Alan Brandt whom I**  
 09:38 20 **know is a witness for the plaintiff, I believe Sir**  
 09:38 21 **Richard Doll who I don't know if he would call**  
 09:38 22 **himself a historian, Ernest Wynder, both of them**  
 09:38 23 **have written very helpful historical recollections**  
 09:39 24 **of their experience and I have found those to be**  
 09:39 25 **authoritative and reliable and helpful. Others**

Page 15

09:39 1 who have written about this from an historical  
 09:39 2 perspective, particularly as the field of chronic  
 09:39 3 - epidemiology of chronic diseases grew out of  
 09:39 4 this controversy, Susser, I forget the first name,  
 09:39 5 and Terrace. Vanderbrook would be another name.  
 09:39 6 These would be examples of individuals that I  
 09:39 7 think have written authoritatively. Of that  
 09:39 8 group, Professors Burnham and Brandt are pure  
 09:39 9 historians and they are both very fine historians  
 09:39 10 in my opinion with deservedly high reputations.  
 09:39 11 The other individuals that I mentioned are  
 09:39 12 not pure historians in that sense. They are more  
 09:39 13 very thoughtful individuals, epidemiologists who  
 09:40 14 lived through the events and wrote what I  
 09:40 15 considered to be very helpful accounts of the  
 09:40 16 events but they don't go to the history of  
 09:40 17 medicine meetings and that type of thing.  
 09:40 18 **Q Within your field, the history of medicine,**  
 09:40 19 **describe the scientific method in a general sense,**  
 09:40 20 **not for this case, but describe the scientific**  
 09:40 21 **methodology employed to solve a problem or answer**  
 09:40 22 **a question or tackle an issue.**  
 09:40 23 **A Gladly. I will speak in general because there**  
 09:40 24 **will be specifics that are determined by the**  
 09:40 25 **problem you study. But, as a generalization, the**

Page 16

09:40 1 historian of medicine will want to do a lot of  
 09:40 2 reading in secondary sources to help put the  
 09:40 3 events under consideration in a proper context.  
 09:40 4 If you are writing about the history of the  
 09:41 5 evolution of our understanding that cigarette  
 09:41 6 smoking causes lung cancer, history of or the  
 09:41 7 scientific understanding that cigarette smoking  
 09:41 8 and disease more broadly; examples of important  
 09:41 9 secondary reading, history of public health,  
 09:41 10 history of cancer, history of NIH, scientific  
 09:41 11 fundings, history of public health, preventive  
 09:41 12 medicine. But there are a number of topics that  
 09:41 13 around any specific issue you are examining and  
 09:41 14 historians recognize that understanding the  
 09:41 15 context is important to interpreting the events  
 09:41 16 and bringing out their meaning and richness.  
 09:41 17 To summarize, Ms. Moltzen, I think I said  
 09:41 18 context would be one important, learning  
 09:41 19 everything you can about the general area and the  
 09:41 20 subject to interpret events. One needs to be  
 09:42 21 accurate in assessing primary sources. Secondary  
 09:42 22 sources as well. But honesty and accuracy is  
 09:42 23 important in all scholarly research. It is just  
 09:42 24 as important in history as it is in any other  
 09:42 25 field. You don't want to make up data. You don't

Page 17

09:42 1 want to falsify data. You don't want to pick and  
 09:42 2 choose selectively. You have to be as fair and  
 09:42 3 objective as possible and represent things as  
 09:42 4 fairly as possible. So we could call it accuracy  
 09:42 5 and fairness a second quality.  
 09:42 6 It is extremely important to be  
 09:42 7 comprehensive, to look at everything. One of the  
 09:42 8 most common errors in my judgment by  
 09:42 9 non-historians who try to do historical work is  
 09:42 10 that they are not comprehensive in their research.  
 09:43 11 They will trace one idea but they won't look for  
 09:43 12 alternative views or they won't look to see how  
 09:43 13 that idea was received. What you really have to  
 09:43 14 do as a historian is look at things from the  
 09:43 15 perspective of the time, very comprehensive, get a  
 09:43 16 total picture. Historians are aware of this but  
 09:43 17 one of the easiest error for non-historians to  
 09:43 18 make in trying to do history from my own personal  
 09:43 19 experience teaching has been failure to be  
 09:43 20 comprehensive.  
 09:43 21 Another qualification of doing history is or  
 09:43 22 quality of doing good history of medicine is  
 09:43 23 avoidance of hindsight. I think, and getting back  
 09:43 24 to your first question, what does history have to  
 09:43 25 offer. I wasn't trying to avoid the general

09:44 1 question, but this is one way in my judgment that  
 09:44 2 history does have something to offer. You can  
 09:44 3 only make decisions and do things based on what  
 09:44 4 you know at the time. No one knows the future.  
 09:44 5 And one of the tasks of the historian is to bring  
 09:44 6 to life and explain reality of what things were  
 09:44 7 like at that particular time, not to apply current  
 09:44 8 standards that may not yet have existed or been  
 09:44 9 created to a previous time. It is unfair to be a  
 09:44 10 Monday morning quarterback. We all know who won  
 09:44 11 the Super Bowl last year but a lot of us  
 09:44 12 particularly in St. Louis thought it was going to  
 09:44 13 be the Rams, that they wouldn't be beaten.  
 09:44 14 I think what's going on today economically is  
 09:44 15 another example. It is not at all clear whether  
 09:44 16 this is fabulous time to invest long term in the  
 09:44 17 stock market or if the market calamities that we  
 09:45 18 have experienced the last few months are a prelude  
 09:45 19 to even more calamities. Five or 10 or 15 years  
 09:45 20 from now people will know. It would be easy for a  
 09:45 21 non-historian to say gee, Mr. Woods, you should  
 09:45 22 have put all of your money in this stock or gee,  
 09:45 23 Mr. Woods, you should have sold everything. It is  
 09:45 24 not so clear at the time. I think avoiding  
 09:45 25 hindsight. Evaluating events in terms of what was

09:47 1 as surprising as that may seem to us today because  
 09:47 2 we have accepted it. We find many instances where  
 09:47 3 the common judgment advocated ideas that have  
 09:47 4 subsequently been disbanded so the consensus is  
 09:47 5 not always right. There is a lot of noise. For  
 09:47 6 every step forward, a step backwards and sideways  
 09:47 7 and false paths. There is an untidiness and  
 09:47 8 messiness in the evolution of knowledge. It is  
 09:47 9 not a straight line of progress from the ignorance  
 09:47 10 of the past to the great certainty of the present.  
 09:47 11 This type of view is something that historians of  
 09:47 12 medicine and science acquire in their training and  
 09:47 13 can bring to the public discussion or teaching  
 09:47 14 discussion of issues in the field.  
 09:48 15 **Q So those are the most important qualities of a**  
 09:48 16 **good medical historian?**  
 09:48 17 **A** As we sit here today I would say. I don't mean  
 09:48 18 those to be exclusive, but I would certainly --  
 09:48 19 **Q They are important?**  
 09:48 20 **A** -- underscore their importance, yes.  
 09:48 21 **Q What about the specific methodology that is used**  
 09:48 22 **by a historian, steps one through 10? What are**  
 09:48 23 **they?**  
 09:48 24 **MR. WOODS:** objection.  
 09:48 25 **A** I'm not certain it is possible to answer that

09:45 1 known at the time, not what came to be known  
 09:45 2 later. I think that's another important quality  
 09:45 3 of good history.  
 09:45 4 And then if you are talking about the history  
 09:45 5 of medicine or history of science specifically in  
 09:45 6 distinction to other branches of history, history  
 09:45 7 of medicine is one branch of history, there is an  
 09:46 8 intellectual component to the history of medicine  
 09:46 9 and history of science. And what historians of  
 09:46 10 science and medicine learn is that history is  
 09:46 11 messy. It is messy and it is untidy, and that the  
 09:46 12 evolution of scientific knowledge is not a  
 09:46 13 straight line of progress. This would be another  
 09:46 14 distinction in my opinion in view of the trained  
 09:46 15 historian of medicine versus someone who is not  
 09:46 16 trained in the field, a scientist or physician who  
 09:46 17 is looking back at the time.  
 09:46 18 It is easy to take what we know today and get  
 09:46 19 a sense that it is just a straight line of  
 09:46 20 progress. What you find in fact is that it didn't  
 09:46 21 happen that way, that for every two steps forward,  
 09:46 22 there were steps backward, steps sideways and that  
 09:47 23 there was -- there have been many ideas that  
 09:47 24 subsequently came to be accepted but then  
 09:47 25 encountered hostility and resistance at that time,

09:48 1 because there is a certain art and craft to doing  
 09:48 2 history. There are as many ways to publish a good  
 09:48 3 book as good books get published and different  
 09:48 4 people go about the process in different ways and  
 09:48 5 some people jump into the primary literature first  
 09:49 6 and others do a lot of reading in secondary  
 09:49 7 literature. Some people begin writing very early  
 09:49 8 on, other people begin writing very late. I think  
 09:49 9 that the general principles that I described  
 09:49 10 before would apply to everyone. But I don't know  
 09:49 11 of a protocol step 1 you do this, step 2 you do  
 09:49 12 this, step 3. Part of it is problem-determined  
 09:49 13 because different problems and questions in  
 09:49 14 history will suggest different types of  
 09:49 15 approaches. But there is a lot of individuality  
 09:49 16 and variation as well. I think if you were to get  
 09:49 17 10 great historians they all have their own  
 09:49 18 idiosyncracies and personal ways of doing things  
 09:49 19 that were different from one to another.  
 09:49 20 **Q Am I correct to say then that there is no one and**  
 09:49 21 **one only methodology that is commonly accepted**  
 09:50 22 **across the field of medical history?**  
 09:50 23 **A** I'm not certain I would phrase it exactly like  
 09:50 24 that. I think that there are certain principles  
 09:50 25 of the history of medicine that are widely taught

Page 22

09:50 1 and implemented in the history of medicine  
 09:50 2 training programs, a certain educational and  
 09:50 3 factual background; so none of the things that a  
 09:50 4 person does in becoming a historian or a scholar  
 09:50 5 in any field is you learn what is there and you  
 09:50 6 get a sense of what is known, the current state of  
 09:50 7 knowledge is in your own particular research area  
 09:50 8 as well as more generally.  
 09:50 9 There is lots of discussion, much of which  
 09:50 10 comes at the seminar level. It is not that you  
 09:50 11 teach a course in methods but you will have a  
 09:50 12 seminar on methods, you will critique a paper or  
 09:51 13 you will do a draft of a chapter for a  
 09:51 14 dissertation, your mentor will go over it. So a  
 09:51 15 lot of the type of teaching and discussion is  
 09:51 16 informal as well as strictly formal.  
 09:51 17 But these issues of what type of evidence is  
 09:51 18 needed for the question at hand. How do you get  
 09:51 19 the evidence. How do you use the evidence fairly.  
 09:51 20 Have you been representative, have you been  
 09:51 21 comprehensive, have you brought about the proper  
 09:51 22 interpretations. Have you put it in a wider  
 09:51 23 context. These sorts of principles I think are  
 09:51 24 general. But in terms of a specific way to doing  
 09:51 25 something, a historian wants to write a new

Page 23

09:51 1 biography of Abraham Lincoln, one could take a lot  
 09:51 2 of different comparable paths to the same goal and  
 09:52 3 that's the distinction I would like to make.  
 09:52 4 **Q Has any court of law ever refused to qualify you**  
 09:52 5 **as an expert witness?**  
 09:52 6 **A No.**  
 09:52 7 **Q Has any party ever challenged your expert witness**  
 09:52 8 **status?**  
 09:52 9 **A Not that I'm aware of.**  
 09:52 10 **Q Have you ever smoked?**  
 09:52 11 **A No, I have not.**  
 09:52 12 **Q Do you believe that smoking causes disease?**  
 09:52 13 **A Yes, I do.**  
 09:52 14 **Q Why do you testify for the tobacco companies?**  
 09:52 15 **MR. WOODS: objection.**  
 09:52 16 **A Number 1, I'm testifying strictly historically,**  
 09:52 17 **not present day. But I'm an advocate of accuracy**  
 09:52 18 **in history. I'm not changing the historical**  
 09:52 19 **record to justify any cause, no matter how**  
 09:52 20 **politically correct it may seem to us today, and**  
 09:53 21 **my involvement with these cases as you perhaps**  
 09:53 22 **know began in 1988 and at that time plaintiffs in**  
 09:53 23 **other cases had witnesses who were completely**  
 09:53 24 **changing the historical record about this subject**  
 09:53 25 **and that testimony was brought to my attention. I**

Page 24

09:53 1 will be very candid, Ms. Moltzen, it really  
 09:53 2 created a dilemma to me because I believe that  
 09:53 3 smoking causes cancer, I always have, still do,  
 09:53 4 and I believe that cigarette smoking is a very  
 09:53 5 serious health effect. But I was also terribly  
 09:53 6 upset to see the historical record being changed  
 09:53 7 in these cases to support a prefabricated concept  
 09:53 8 of public history. In my judgment I have an  
 09:54 9 advocacy to accuracy in history and to portray the  
 09:54 10 events as objectively as one possibly can and not  
 09:54 11 changing the facts. Not suing a doctor for not  
 09:54 12 using Penicillin before Penicillin was discovered,  
 09:54 13 this sort of thing.  
 09:54 14 So I sought counsel. I discussed the subject  
 09:54 15 with my department chairman, with the Dean of the  
 09:54 16 medical school, with I believe the Chancellor of  
 09:54 17 the university, certainly with two or three very  
 09:54 18 eminent, very senior, very wise members of the  
 09:54 19 faculty. They were all of the view it was  
 09:54 20 appropriate for me to be a witness, A, as long as  
 09:54 21 I was speaking strictly historically; B, as long  
 09:54 22 as I made clear that I don't believe that  
 09:55 23 cigarette smoking causes lung cancer, that it is a  
 09:55 24 major public health hazard, and so forth. Their  
 09:55 25 counsel was that an equally important principle

Page 25

09:55 1 was not changing the facts of history and it would  
 09:55 2 be appropriate for me to give a historical account  
 09:55 3 how we came to know what we did in the events that  
 09:55 4 culminated with the Surgeon General's report of  
 09:55 5 1964. So that's how I got to where I am. Would I  
 09:55 6 rather be testifying for the US government? Of  
 09:55 7 course I would. On the other hand, these were the  
 09:55 8 circumstances I sought counsel from leaders at my  
 09:55 9 university and that's how it came to be.  
 09:55 10 **MS. MOLTZEN: Let's go off the record.**  
 09:55 11 **THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record.**  
 09:55 12 **The time is 9:51 a.m.**  
 09:57 13 **(Short recess was taken.)**  
 09:57 14 **(Deposition Exhibit Nos. 1 through 5**  
 09:57 15 **were marked for identification.)**  
 09:57 16 **THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Back on the record.**  
 09:57 17 **The time is 9:53 AM.**  
 09:57 18 **Q Dr. Ludmerer, I'm going to hand you what has been**  
 09:57 19 **marked as Deposition Exhibit Ludmerer number 1.**  
 09:57 20 **Have you seen that document before?**  
 09:58 21 **A These documents get confusing to me. I believe**  
 09:58 22 **this is the document that says I'm to be deposed**  
 09:58 23 **today?**  
 09:58 24 **Q It is.**  
 09:58 25 **A Yes, I have seen it before.**

Compliance to previous deposition

Page 26

09:58 1 Q It a Notice of Deposition of Joint Defendants'  
 09:58 2 Expert Kenneth Ludmerer.  
 09:58 3 A Yes, I have seen that before.  
 09:58 4 Q Thank you. I'm going to hand you what has been  
 09:58 5 marked as Deposition Exhibit Ludmerer 2. It is  
 09:58 6 entitled Expert Report of Dr. Kenneth M Ludmerer,  
 09:58 7 MD. Can you identify that document for the  
 09:58 8 record?  
 09:58 9 A Yes, I have seen that before.  
 09:58 10 Q Did you write this report? Let's try this. On  
 09:58 11 Page 7 there is a signature. Is that your  
 09:59 12 signature?  
 09:59 13 A That is my signature.  
 09:59 14 Q Did you prepare this report?  
 09:59 15 A I participated in its preparation. I did not  
 09:59 16 actually draft the report. It was drafted by  
 09:59 17 individuals at one of the firms based on previous  
 09:59 18 testimony, previous conversations, previous  
 09:59 19 depositions. It was sent to me for editing so I  
 09:59 20 read it, approved it, it represents my views. I  
 09:59 21 did not physically compose it.  
 09:59 22 Q When you say one of the firms, who do you mean?  
 09:59 23 A Well, I presume it was the Shook, Hardy, Bacon  
 09:59 24 firm.  
 09:59 25 Q Law firm?

Page 27

09:59 1 A Law firm. I would presume that, but I have been  
 09:59 2 involved with a handful of cases as you know and  
 09:59 3 quite frankly I don't know who initially prepared  
 09:59 4 it and how it has been edited over time. The  
 10:00 5 expert statements for the handful of cases I have  
 10:00 6 been involved with have been very similar and they  
 10:00 7 go back a long way. So I would be guessing to say  
 10:00 8 that it was done at the Shook, Hardy, Bacon firm.  
 10:00 9 It could have been another firm that represents  
 10:00 10 the defense.  
 10:00 11 Q Do you know who you worked with in editing the  
 10:00 12 drafts of the report?  
 10:00 13 A From that point it would be David Woods and Chris  
 10:00 14 Walker who are here today.  
 10:00 15 Q I'm going to hand you what has been marked as  
 10:00 16 Deposition Exhibit Ludmerer 3. Can you identify  
 10:00 17 that for the record?  
 10:00 18 A Deposition 3 is a copy of my curriculum vitae.  
 10:00 19 Q Is this, is Exhibit 3 an accurate and current  
 10:00 20 version of your cv?  
 10:01 21 A It is accurate but it is not current. I recently  
 10:01 22 updated it, I think Mr. Woods provided you a new  
 10:01 23 version of it. If it would help, I could mention  
 10:01 24 to you the main changes.  
 10:01 25 Q That would be helpful. I think we will first mark

Page 28

10:01 1 this as the next exhibit.  
 2 (Deposition Exhibit No. 6 was marked for  
 10:01 3 identification.)  
 10:01 4 Q The updated cv has been marked as Deposition  
 10:01 5 Exhibit Ludmerer 6. Can you tell us the main  
 10:01 6 changes between that and number 3?  
 10:01 7 A Correct. Number 3, Ms. Moltzen, is June, 2001.  
 10:01 8 Item number 6 is May, 2002. Basically they are  
 10:01 9 the same but if you are looking at what the  
 10:01 10 significant changes, I won't go through the small  
 10:02 11 things, there are a few more published articles,  
 10:02 12 that type of thing. If you look at the invited  
 10:02 13 lectures and visiting professorships which is  
 10:02 14 item --  
 10:02 15 Q Roman Numeral xi?  
 10:02 16 A Roman Numeral xi, it is clear from the earlier cv  
 10:02 17 of June, 2001, that I received a lot of  
 10:02 18 invitations to be a visiting lecturer, named  
 10:02 19 professorship. I can't accept them all. There  
 10:02 20 are 102 such named lectureships listed on the  
 10:02 21 June, 2001 version. On the May, 2002 version we  
 10:02 22 are up to 122. So in the 11 intervening months I  
 10:02 23 delivered an additional 20 named lectureships or  
 10:02 24 named visiting professorship in an educational  
 10:02 25 institution 20 times.

Page 29

10:02 1 A second change is that, it is minor but it  
 10:03 2 is something I'm proud of, on the June, 2001  
 10:03 3 version I list seven professional journals, either  
 10:03 4 historical journals or medical journals in which I  
 10:03 5 served on the editorial board. In January of this  
 10:03 6 year I was invited to serve on the editorial board  
 10:03 7 of Isis. It is a small change. It is eight  
 10:03 8 journals rather than seven. On the other hand,  
 10:03 9 Isis is a very important scholarly journal in the  
 10:03 10 field of the history of science. It is the  
 10:03 11 official journal of the History of Science Society  
 10:03 12 so I'm proud to be on that board. So a small but  
 10:03 13 it is present on the new version, it was not  
 10:03 14 present on the old version.  
 10:04 15 And then lastly I would bring to your  
 10:04 16 attention that in the spring of this year, 2002, I  
 10:04 17 was elected to the American Academy of Arts and  
 10:04 18 Sciences and that is indicated on the May, 2002  
 10:04 19 version by definition. It is not in the earlier  
 10:04 20 version because I wasn't a member of the academy  
 10:04 21 at that time.  
 10:04 22 Q Which Roman Numeral is it under?  
 10:04 23 A I listed it in two places, it is listed  
 10:04 24 professional society because it is a professional  
 10:04 25 society. But as you are aware, it is an extremely

Page 30

10:04 1 organization, one that I feel very honored to be  
10:04 2 part of. I also listed it under awards and honors  
10:05 3 where you frequently see it listed in professional  
10:05 4 so I put it under the awards and honors category.  
10:05 5 Those are the main changes. I'm sure I could take  
10:05 6 out a microscope and additional paper and  
10:05 7 additional community service board and so forth  
10:05 8 but those are the chief changes from the earlier  
10:05 9 version to the present version.  
10:05 10 **Q I'm going to hand you what has been marked as**  
10:05 11 **Deposition Exhibit Ludmerer 4 and it is entitled**  
10:05 12 **Joint Defendants' Expert Disclosure for Kenneth M.**  
10:05 13 **Ludmerer. This was the cover document that was**  
10:05 14 **sent to the United States along with your**  
10:05 15 **disclosure.**  
10:05 16 **The reason I'm doing this is because in the**  
10:05 17 **second paragraph it says, "Accompanying this**  
10:05 18 **expert disclosure and report are the data,**  
10:05 19 **exhibits, and/or information that Dr. Ludmerer**  
10:06 20 **considered in forming the opinions expressed in**  
10:06 21 **his report; a curriculum vitae; publications**  
10:06 22 **authored by Dr. Ludmerer within the last 10 years;**  
10:06 23 **and transcripts of trial and deposition testimony**  
10:06 24 **within the last four years." And we are going to**  
10:06 25 **be take talking about some of those so I wanted**

Page 31

10:06 1 **that on the record. Instead of bringing all of**  
10:06 2 **the trial and deposition transcripts over the last**  
10:06 3 **four years with me, I made up a list, it has been**  
10:06 4 **marked as Deposition Exhibit 5. I am doing this**  
10:06 5 **because I don't want -- this is not a memory game.**  
10:06 6 **We don't have to sit here and you try to remember**  
10:07 7 **when and where.**  
10:07 8 **A I appreciate that, thank you.**  
10:07 9 **Q If this is incorrect, that's fine. It is just as**  
10:07 10 **a tool we can use. From the documents that your**  
10:07 11 **attorneys sent me, these were the cases over the**  
10:07 12 **last four years that you had either been deposed**  
10:07 13 **in or had testified at trial. As you look over**  
10:07 14 **that list, are there any errors there or are there**  
10:07 15 **any additions?**  
10:07 16 **A We have a camera going, a videotape going so I**  
10:07 17 **will try not to be too silent. We have one, two,**  
10:07 18 **three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, 10, 10**  
10:07 19 **events, four trials, six depositions. That looks**  
10:07 20 **about right. It is pretty close.**  
10:07 21 **Q As we sit here you can't think of any additional**  
10:07 22 **cases that you were deposed in over the last four**  
10:08 23 **years that come to mind right now?**  
10:08 24 **A Not that immediately come to mind. This looks**  
10:08 25 **right.**

Page 32

10:08 1 **Q Going back to your cv which was Exhibit -- it was**  
10:08 2 **3 and 6, wasn't it? Is the education on that**  
10:08 3 **current and accurate?**  
10:08 4 **A Yes, it is. There is nothing that is inaccurate**  
10:08 5 **in the earlier cv. It is just --**  
10:08 6 **Q Incomplete?**  
10:08 7 **A Or incomplete or inaccurate, it is just in the**  
10:08 8 **intervening year of some notable things happened.**  
10:08 9 **Without taking your time to go into every new**  
10:08 10 **article and every new committee and every new that**  
10:08 11 **I just highlighted what I considered to be the**  
10:08 12 **most important events of the last 11 months.**  
10:09 13 **Everything in the earlier cv is accurate.**  
10:09 14 **Q As far as during your years of education, did you**  
10:09 15 **do any research projects yourself?**  
10:09 16 **A Yes, I did.**  
10:09 17 **Q Can you describe them?**  
10:09 18 **A Are you talking college education, medical**  
10:09 19 **education?**  
10:09 20 **Q Let's start with medical education.**  
10:09 21 **A I interrupted formal medical school to do a**  
10:09 22 **project in the history of medicine.**  
10:09 23 **Q Where was that?**  
10:09 24 **A This was at John Hopkins, Baltimore, Maryland.**  
10:09 25 **Q What did the project consist of?**

Page 33

10:09 1 **A I wrote my first book at that time, Genetics in**  
10:09 2 **American Society. And actually I think it might**  
10:09 3 **be more accurate to say that my research**  
10:10 4 **involvement goes back to my college days, my**  
10:10 5 **college undergraduate days which were at Harvard**  
10:10 6 **University, and I concentrated in the program**  
10:10 7 **called history and science, and the name is and**  
10:10 8 **science, not of science. And that was a very**  
10:10 9 **popular field of concentration for pre-medical**  
10:10 10 **students. You got as much science as if you had**  
10:10 11 **majored in conventional science so you didn't feel**  
10:10 12 **like you were depriving yourself. You could take**  
10:10 13 **as much science as if you had chosen to major in**  
10:10 14 **biology or chemistry, but there was much more**  
10:10 15 **emphasis on the liberal arts and history in**  
10:10 16 **general on the history of science in particular;**  
10:10 17 **and the department was administered by the history**  
10:10 18 **of science faculty at Harvard and our senior**  
10:10 19 **thesis were in the history of science.**  
10:10 20 **So as a college undergraduate I essentially**  
10:11 21 **had a double major, history being one of them. I**  
10:11 22 **wrote my senior thesis on the history of the**  
10:11 23 **American eugenics movement and really made that a**  
10:11 24 **major project. That was a big activity for me at**  
10:11 25 **that time. I received the departmental prize for**

Page 34

10:11 1 best thesis. It was really closer to a master's  
 10:11 2 thesis than to a college undergraduate thesis.  
 10:11 3 I went to medical school at John Hopkins  
 10:11 4 because that's where I had dreamed to go to  
 10:11 5 medical school. I was lucky enough to get in, and  
 10:11 6 really thought that would be the end of my work in  
 10:11 7 the history. But by sheer coincidence Hopkins is  
 10:11 8 one of the minority medical schools that has a  
 10:11 9 history of medicine program in the school. There  
 10:11 10 is a department the history of medicine, and we  
 10:11 11 had required courses in the history of medicine in  
 10:12 12 both the first and second years of medical school.  
 10:12 13 I went to all of the lectures, my two traditional  
 10:12 14 courses. I got to know the faculty well. And how  
 10:12 15 many medical students have a genuine interest in  
 10:12 16 medical history? Not that many, so it wasn't hard  
 10:12 17 to get the know the faculty well. But that  
 10:12 18 contact, that exposure gave me the idea of turning  
 10:12 19 my college thesis into a book. So the presence of  
 10:12 20 the department of the history of medicine  
 10:12 21 facilitated that.  
 10:12 22 I took a leave of absence from medical school  
 10:12 23 per se, I was a graduate student in the history of  
 10:12 24 medicine at John Hopkins. I attended the seminars  
 10:12 25 they asked me to do and did the other things that

Page 35

10:12 1 graduate students do but essentially I turned my  
 10:12 2 college thesis into a book. That's the first book  
 10:12 3 listed in my cv. It is entitled Genetics in  
 10:13 4 American Society. It was an outgrowth of my  
 10:13 5 college undergraduate thesis that I have the  
 10:13 6 opportunity to pursue as a graduate student in the  
 10:13 7 medical history at John Hopkins and that became my  
 10:13 8 first book.  
 10:13 9 **Q Did any of that research work and the eventual**  
 10:13 10 **book that came out of it, is there anything in it**  
 10:13 11 **is that is related to smoking and health?**  
 10:13 12 **A** Not directly.  
 10:13 13 **Q This covers a couple of sections of your cv. I**  
 10:13 14 **want to talk about employment and experience and**  
 10:13 15 **flesh out the cv a little bit. Research**  
 10:13 16 **Associate, Department of the History of Science at**  
 10:14 17 **Harvard University. What were your duties, what**  
 10:14 18 **did you do at that point in time?**  
 10:14 19 **A** I did work in the history of medicine full-time.  
 10:14 20 This cv probably reads a bit differently from a  
 10:14 21 conventional cv from a full-time Ph.D historian  
 10:14 22 because I have combined the history of medicine  
 10:14 23 with work in clinical medicine. I had done a  
 10:14 24 residency, a medical residency in medicine we have  
 10:14 25 post-doctoral fellowships and training-vehicles

Page 36

10:14 1 that are much more common in medicine than they  
 10:14 2 are in the arts and sciences. But essentially  
 10:14 3 what happened was that I did my first book, I did  
 10:14 4 my work in the history of medicine at John Hopkins  
 10:14 5 that I described to you. I returned to medical  
 10:14 6 school proper and received my MD degree from  
 10:14 7 Hopkins. I went to Barnes Hospital, which is the  
 10:15 8 teaching hospital of the Washington University  
 10:15 9 School of Medicine in St. Louis, and did three  
 10:15 10 years of an internal medicine residency, qualified  
 10:15 11 for the boards in internal medicine, took the  
 10:15 12 boards, passed them my first attempt, and then  
 10:15 13 funded by the Department of Medicine went back to  
 10:15 14 Harvard for two years as a post-doctoral student  
 10:15 15 in the history of medicine. We are kind of making  
 10:15 16 up terms because it was uniquely created by my  
 10:15 17 department chairman to help promote my own  
 10:15 18 academic endeavors. I remained very close to  
 10:15 19 people at Harvard.  
 10:15 20 My first book had grown from my experiences  
 10:15 21 as a Harvard undergraduate. I thought to myself  
 10:15 22 you know if I can be at Harvard and get an idea  
 10:15 23 for one book, maybe if I went back for a couple of  
 10:15 24 years I can get an idea for a second book. So I  
 10:15 25 was a full-time student in the history of science.

Page 37

10:16 1 I wasn't taking things for credit. I already had  
 10:16 2 my degrees. But I was auditing courses, talking  
 10:16 3 with people, which was is a large part of the  
 10:16 4 experience, thinking, reading, reflecting, and  
 10:16 5 that is when I became interested in the history of  
 10:16 6 medical education as a subject and that began my  
 10:16 7 -- my second book began during that two years as a  
 10:16 8 post doctoral fellow at Harvard in the history of  
 10:16 9 science.  
 10:16 10 **Q It also says that, I take it during that time you**  
 10:16 11 **were an instructor of medicine at Washington**  
 10:16 12 **University. What kind of courses did you teach?**  
 10:16 13 **A** Well, we were -- let me backtrack. My department  
 10:16 14 chairman at Washington University, Dr. David  
 10:16 15 Kipnis, gave me the opportunity to pursue a unique  
 10:17 16 career, to be an academic internist with a  
 10:17 17 significant academic participation at a first tier  
 10:17 18 level in the history of medicine. No one had done  
 10:17 19 that before, combining the two in that fashion.  
 10:17 20 And he used conventional medical instruments,  
 10:17 21 educational instruments to help me achieve those  
 10:17 22 goals.  
 10:17 23 What we have in internal medicine are what  
 10:17 24 are commonly -- all of medicine what are commonly  
 10:17 25 called post-doctoral fellowships so say you finish

Page 38

10:17 1 a residency in internal medicine and you want to  
 10:17 2 become an academic cardiologist. So you do a  
 10:17 3 cardiology fellowship for a few years and that  
 10:17 4 means you spend a portion of your time in clinical  
 10:17 5 cardiology. But if you have academic goals, most  
 10:17 6 of your time is in research. So we created a  
 10:17 7 self-designed fellowship in general internal  
 10:17 8 medicine in which I combined work in general  
 10:17 9 internal medicine with what I did for most of the  
 10:18 10 time which was research and study in the history  
 10:18 11 of medicine. It gets complicated, and I  
 10:18 12 apologize.

10:18 13 **Q That's all right.**

10:18 14 **A I went back to Harvard for two academic years and**  
 10:18 15 **did work full-time in the history of medicine and**  
 10:18 16 **history of science and discovered medical**  
 10:18 17 **education. The summers I came back to St. Louis**  
 10:18 18 **to meet my clinical obligations for the fellowship**  
 10:18 19 **and I attended on the medical service of the**  
 10:18 20 **Veteran's Hospital.**

10:18 21 **Q What did that entail?**

10:18 22 **A That entails being responsible for a resident, an**  
 10:18 23 **intern and a team of students, supervising them in**  
 10:18 24 **their care of patients and teaching them as you**  
 10:18 25 **go.**

Page 39

10:18 1 **Q So here when it says instructor of medicine, you**  
 10:18 2 **did not actually teach students in a classroom?**

10:18 3 **A That is not entirely correct. Most teaching in**  
 10:19 4 **all clinical departments is bedside and small**  
 10:19 5 **group teaching. That is the type of teaching that**  
 10:19 6 **I engaged in and that is the type of teaching that**  
 10:19 7 **everyone engages in and most of the teaching that**  
 10:19 8 **I did then and that I do now is of that sort. In**  
 10:19 9 **addition to that, I'm talking clinical, I'm**  
 10:19 10 **talking internal medicine, and clinical**  
 10:19 11 **departments, the same would be true of pediatrics**  
 10:19 12 **or surgery. There are conferences, there are**  
 10:19 13 **rounds, and occasionally faculty members will give**  
 10:19 14 **a talk on this subject or that subject or present**  
 10:19 15 **a grand rounds and I have done some of that also.**

10:19 16 **But unlike the arts and science campus where**  
 10:19 17 **a professor of history including myself will have**  
 10:19 18 **a course on the history of medicine, as an**  
 10:19 19 **instructor in internal medicine I don't offer**  
 10:19 20 **course in internal medicine, I assume**  
 10:19 21 **responsibility for the care of a group of patients**  
 10:19 22 **and the students and house staff who are involved**  
 10:20 23 **with their care and it is a small group, informal,**  
 10:20 24 **teach as you go, this morning's discussion is**  
 10:20 25 **going to be determined by who was admitted last**

Page 40

10:20 1 night and what those issues involved and that type  
 10:20 2 of thing.

10:20 3 **Q From '79 to '86, according to your cv, are you**  
 10:20 4 **both and assistant professor of medicine at the**  
 10:20 5 **School of Medicine at Washington University, and**  
 10:20 6 **an assistant professor of history, Faculty of Arts**  
 10:20 7 **and Sciences at Washington University. How did**  
 10:20 8 **your duties change in those years from the prior**  
 10:20 9 **years?**

10:20 10 **A There was an intervening year that we might**  
 10:20 11 **mention. It is a year that I'm proud of so I**  
 10:20 12 **mention it. But I was chief resident in internal**  
 10:20 13 **medicine for the Washington University system.**  
 10:20 14 **That was an entirely clinical year. It was not an**  
 10:20 15 **historical year. We had two chief residents who**  
 10:20 16 **essentially ran the clinical service and the**  
 10:21 17 **teaching service in internal medicine. And if you**  
 10:21 18 **will permit to say so, it is a great distinction**  
 10:21 19 **to be chosen to be the chief resident and had**  
 10:21 20 **always been a dream of mine. I was very product**  
 10:21 21 **of that. That was '78, '79.**

10:21 22 **Q Does that include more administrative work than**  
 10:21 23 **being the instructor of medicine?**

10:21 24 **A There is a bit more administrative work. Now the**  
 10:21 25 **job has changed, by the way, because I was chief**

Page 41

10:21 1 resident in '78, '79. But a chief resident has  
 10:21 2 different duties today and has more administrative  
 10:21 3 duties today than at that relatively simple time  
 10:21 4 not that long ago. Yes, there are more  
 10:21 5 administrative duties because you are making up  
 10:21 6 the schedule and that sort of thing. The single  
 10:21 7 hardest administrative duty was actually that  
 10:21 8 because we had about 85 to 90 house officers. I'm  
 10:21 9 defining the house officers as the interns, the  
 10:21 10 first year residents and the second year  
 10:22 11 residents. So we had to make up their schedule  
 10:22 12 for the year. We also note that we had certain  
 10:22 13 services to cover. We had four floors in private  
 10:22 14 service, we had three floors in what we then  
 10:22 15 called ward medicine, we had a Veteran's Hospital  
 10:22 16 we had to staff, we had the city hospital, now  
 10:22 17 closed, but we had a municipal hospital, we had to  
 10:22 18 staff that, we had emergency room, we that  
 10:22 19 coronary care room, we that electives. We had to  
 10:22 20 keep them all staffed.

10:22 21 **It was our job to arrange each house**  
 10:22 22 **officer's schedule on this month you are on ward**  
 10:22 23 **medicine, the next month you are in emergency**  
 10:22 24 **room, two months of private medicine. We had to**  
 10:22 25 **make up the call schedule. Not only are you on**

Page 42

10:22 1 ward medicine, but you are admitting every third  
 10:22 2 night or every fourth night, this is when you are  
 10:22 3 on, this is when you are off, this is who you are  
 10:23 4 working with. So there was a significant amount  
 10:23 5 of administrative work to create such a schedule.  
 10:23 6 It sounds simple but when you have close to  
 10:23 7 90 people and before computers and all the  
 10:23 8 services, you try to take into account people's  
 10:23 9 wishes and preferences. My best friend is being  
 10:23 10 married in February, can my vacation come in  
 10:23 11 February, this sort of thing so I can attend. To  
 10:23 12 tell you the truth, it was a ton of work to do  
 10:23 13 then. Fortunately it was done before the year  
 10:23 14 began. The year was like July 1 to June 30 and my  
 10:23 15 co-chief resident and I worked on the schedule  
 10:23 16 like April and May. So by the time the year began  
 10:23 17 it was pretty smooth going. The hard  
 10:23 18 administrative job had been done. Putting  
 10:23 19 together that schedule was a bear.  
 10:23 20 Then there are minor administrative things  
 10:23 21 that come up all along. If there is a problem in  
 10:23 22 the clinical service. One of the honors of being  
 10:23 23 chief resident is that you are the one who is  
 10:23 24 called and you resolve this issue, you put out  
 10:23 25 that fire. So there is more administrative work

Page 43

10:23 1 than I had subsequently when I was actually a full  
 10:24 2 faculty member. I didn't have to worry about some  
 10:24 3 of the things they year when I was chief resident.  
 10:24 4 MS. MOLTZEN: Off the record.  
 10:24 5 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record  
 10:24 6 for a tape change. The time is 10:19 AM.  
 7 (Short recess was taken.)  
 8 (Deposition Exhibit Nos. 7 through 12  
 10:35 9 were marked for identification.)  
 10:35 10 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: We are back on the  
 10:35 11 record. The time is 10:30 AM.  
 10:35 12 Q Dr. Ludmerer, from 1979 to 1986, you were  
 10:35 13 assistant professor of medicine at the School of  
 10:35 14 Medicine and assistant professor of history at the  
 10:35 15 Faculty of Arts and Sciences both at Washington  
 10:35 16 University. How did your duties change with those  
 10:35 17 two new positions?  
 10:35 18 A I don't understand the question. How did I do the  
 10:35 19 change?  
 10:35 20 Q How were those jobs different than what you had  
 10:35 21 been doing previously which was it looks to me  
 10:35 22 like chief resident and instructor of medicine?  
 10:35 23 A As chief resident, one is given the faculty title  
 10:36 24 instructor. Essentially what happened in 1979 was  
 10:36 25 I finished my training and joined the faculty.

Page 44

10:36 1 Because I was fully trained both in internal  
 10:36 2 medicine and in the history of medicine, I  
 10:36 3 qualified for an academic appointment in both  
 10:36 4 departments. I was actually the first person that  
 10:36 5 I'm aware of in the university who received a full  
 10:36 6 academic appointment in two departments, in two  
 10:36 7 different parts of the university. So I became an  
 10:36 8 assistant professor of history in the Faculty of  
 10:36 9 Arts and Sciences and assistant professor of  
 10:36 10 medicine in the School of Medicine. I was on the  
 10:36 11 tenure track. But essentially the earlier part of  
 10:36 12 the CV deals with education and training, earlier  
 10:36 13 research experience and so forth. Now I'm a  
 10:36 14 faculty member, assistant professor.  
 10:36 15 Q What did that entail?  
 10:36 16 A It entailed clinical work, teaching and research.  
 10:37 17 And the history of medicine side it together  
 10:37 18 because the great gift that the department of  
 10:37 19 medicine gave to me was in allowing the work that  
 10:37 20 I did in the history of medicine to count as my  
 10:37 21 scholarship in the department of medicine. I did  
 10:37 22 not have to moonlight as a historian and do  
 10:37 23 laboratory work during the day or clinical studies  
 10:37 24 during the day or drug trials during the day. I  
 10:37 25 had to be productive in a scholarly fashion as all

Page 45

10:37 1 members of the academic track were expected to be.  
 10:37 2 As a publisher perish, if you don't get tenure,  
 10:37 3 you are booted out type of thing.  
 10:37 4 But their gift to me was allowing my  
 10:37 5 scholarship in the history of medicine to count.  
 10:37 6 So I met my clinical obligations as an attending  
 10:37 7 physician, attending on the internal medicine  
 10:37 8 service, at that time I would estimate five months  
 10:38 9 a year. That was similar to the attending I had  
 10:38 10 done as a fellow. I had a resident and intern and  
 10:38 11 couple of students and be responsible for that  
 10:38 12 group of patients. The teaching would be small  
 10:38 13 group tutorial individualized based on the cases.  
 10:38 14 Every once in awhile you get asked to give a  
 10:38 15 lecture or to take rounds or to do teaching with a  
 10:38 16 larger group of people.  
 10:38 17 So from the department of medicine side I  
 10:38 18 lumped the clinical and the teaching together  
 10:38 19 because they go hand in hand. In the history side  
 10:38 20 I began offering a similar course in the history  
 10:38 21 of the American medical profession which I  
 10:38 22 continue to do today. I would have occasional  
 10:38 23 students, usually undergraduates, sometimes  
 10:38 24 graduates, who would do research electives with  
 10:38 25 me, tutorials, theses, dissertations, that type of

10:39 1 thing, and the majority of my time was in research  
 10:39 2 and the research was the history of medicine. And  
 10:39 3 it was during that time that I wrote my second  
 10:39 4 book, Learning to Heal, on the creation of how the  
 10:39 5 system of medical education in the United States,  
 10:39 6 where medical schools came from, where the  
 10:39 7 teaching hospitals came from, how our system of  
 10:39 8 educating physicians grew.

10:39 9 **Q Then in 1986 you become associate professor both**  
 10:39 10 **at the School of Medicine and on the Faculty of**  
 10:39 11 **Arts and Sciences. Did your work change at all**  
 10:39 12 **with that promotion?**

10:39 13 **A** Not in any substantive way. I was promoted, I  
 10:39 14 received tenure, so you are higher up in the  
 10:39 15 academic ladder. But essentially my duties were  
 10:39 16 the same. As one becomes more senior on the  
 10:40 17 faculty, at least at my school sometimes it is  
 10:40 18 more committee work, often on an ad hoc basis. I  
 10:40 19 have always had a very close relationship and  
 10:40 20 continue to do so with the chairs of both history  
 10:40 21 and internal medicine as well as with the Dean of  
 10:40 22 arts and science and the medical school as well as  
 10:40 23 with the Chancellor of the university. Frequently  
 10:40 24 each of those individuals would call me with  
 10:40 25 special projects or I could appreciate your advice

10:41 1 divided between Barnes Hospital, our main  
 10:41 2 university teaching hospital, and the John Cochran  
 10:42 3 Veteran's Hospital which is two or three miles  
 10:42 4 from the university, it is an acute care Veteran's  
 10:42 5 Hospital. We have a service there, all of our  
 10:42 6 medical students and all of our Washington  
 10:42 7 University internal medicine house staff rotate  
 10:42 8 through the Veteran's Hospital, and accordingly we  
 10:42 9 need some of our faculty to do attending rotations  
 10:42 10 there. I did some of my attending rotations at  
 10:42 11 the Veteran's Hospital and some back at Barnes,  
 10:42 12 the mother hospital.

10:42 13 **Q Then in 1992 you became a full professor of**  
 10:42 14 **medicine at the School of Medicine and a professor**  
 10:42 15 **of history on the faculty of arts and sciences?**

10:42 16 **A** That's correct.

10:42 17 **Q Does that continue up to the present?**

10:42 18 **A** That is correct. I was promoted to full professor  
 10:42 19 both in internal medicine and in history on the  
 10:42 20 basis of my scholarship in the history of  
 10:42 21 medicine. As I mentioned to you before, the gift  
 10:42 22 that the department of medicine gave me was  
 10:43 23 allowing scholarship in the history of medicine to  
 10:43 24 count for the department, as long as it pertained  
 10:43 25 to medicine, and they accepted that. That was

10:40 1 or input on this or that. As I was tenured in  
 10:40 2 associate professor there was a bit more of that  
 10:40 3 than there had been.

10:40 4 But the main change is that on the basis of  
 10:40 5 the book that I mentioned, Learning to Heal, I was  
 10:40 6 promoted, I got tenure, I knew I wouldn't have to  
 10:40 7 leave St. Louis, and could relax in that sense.

10:40 8 There was really no substantive change in my  
 10:40 9 duties. The teaching clinical work and research  
 10:41 10 and scholarship and history of medicine continued  
 10:41 11 onward as it had before.

10:41 12 **Q Were you still doing the same amount of clinical**  
 10:41 13 **work? You had testified approximately five months**  
 10:41 14 **a year.**

10:41 15 **A** At that time we were doing -- at that time I was  
 10:41 16 on one service or the other approximately five  
 10:41 17 months a year. That didn't mean that it took all  
 10:41 18 day every day to be on the service. It usually  
 10:41 19 took the morning. Attending regulations at that  
 10:41 20 time were not as stringent as they are now in  
 10:41 21 terms of recordkeeping and documentation. So it  
 10:41 22 didn't mean that I was all day long occupied. But  
 10:41 23 I was responsible for a service approximately, in  
 10:41 24 most -- it would vary from year to year. But on  
 10:41 25 the average about five months a year. That was

10:43 1 novel. Other people are doing that today with  
 10:43 2 positions based on mine. To my knowledge my  
 10:43 3 appointment was the first that allowed me to do  
 10:43 4 that clinical department to be a doctor and have  
 10:43 5 an historical scholarship count as my scholarship  
 10:43 6 instead of having to go through genetics and be a  
 10:43 7 doctor. So I was promoted to full professor in  
 10:43 8 both departments on the basis of progress  
 10:43 9 accomplished to that point on what became my third  
 10:43 10 book and my most recent book called Time to Heal.  
 10:43 11 That was published about two and a half years ago.  
 10:43 12 It hadn't come out yet but I was getting grant  
 10:43 13 support for the book. I could demonstrate  
 10:43 14 progress was occurring, people were excited about  
 10:43 15 it, and I was promoted to full professor in both  
 10:44 16 departments, and as with my promotion from  
 10:44 17 assistant to associate professor, it was largely a  
 10:44 18 change of stature. It is a greater honor to be a  
 10:44 19 full professor than an associate professor. It  
 10:44 20 was even easier to have the ear of the Dean or the  
 10:44 21 Chancellor or the department chair in the history  
 10:44 22 of medicine or that sort of thing. There were not  
 10:44 23 any substantive changes in my work.

10:44 24 **Q That was going to be my next question. Were you**  
 10:44 25 **still doing about five months per year of clinical**

Page 50

10:44 1 work? Are you still doing?  
 10:44 2 A Actually now it is about four. Somewhere in the  
 10:44 3 early or mid nineties when all of the hospital  
 10:44 4 mergers are occurring and all of the consolidation  
 10:44 5 of the health care system was occurring in  
 10:44 6 response to the possibility that the Clinton  
 10:45 7 administration might pass legislation, somewhere  
 10:45 8 around that time Barnes Hospital merged with  
 10:45 9 Jewish Hospital, which is an ancillary Washington  
 10:45 10 University teaching hospital, they are across the  
 10:45 11 street from each other, and then the house staff  
 10:45 12 merged, the Jewish Hospital used to have its own  
 10:45 13 house staff and we would have our house staff.  
 10:45 14 Now we have one house staff. The service became  
 10:45 15 larger, more complex, more to cover, and we  
 10:45 16 switched from -- and also with that we wanted to  
 10:45 17 give our students more ambulatory instruction  
 10:45 18 rather than pure inpatient instruction. To do all  
 10:45 19 of the, with the merger and the desire to increase  
 10:45 20 ambulatory instruction, from the time I had  
 10:46 21 arrived at Washington University in the mid  
 10:46 22 seventies as an intern through the mid nineties,  
 10:46 23 the clinical rotations were six weeks in duration  
 10:46 24 and I would have typically four rotations. With  
 10:46 25 these mergers that I have been describing, the

Page 51

10:46 1 clinical rotations were shortened to four weeks.  
 10:46 2 So and then I had four rotations as before but now  
 10:46 3 we are talking four week rotations rather than six  
 10:46 4 rotations. So on average my time in the clinical  
 10:46 5 service changed from about five months to four  
 10:46 6 months.  
 10:46 7 Q Since 1979 have you maintained an office for the  
 10:46 8 private practice of medicine?  
 10:46 9 A I do not have an outpatient practice. I'm part of  
 10:46 10 the Washington University faculty practice plan  
 10:47 11 which means that when I see patients they are  
 10:47 12 considered my private patients, and billing is  
 10:47 13 done by the Washington University business  
 10:47 14 department and I'm the physician of record and  
 10:47 15 responsible physician.  
 10:47 16 For various reasons my clinical work from the  
 10:47 17 beginning through the present has entirely been on  
 10:47 18 the inpatient service. I have not had an  
 10:47 19 outpatient practice following individuals as  
 10:47 20 ambulatory patients. If I were coming along today  
 10:47 21 it is very possible that I might have. But at the  
 10:47 22 time we did not have the division of general  
 10:47 23 internal medicine. I was only a general internist  
 10:47 24 on the full-time faculty of an intensely  
 10:47 25 research-oriented medical school which I think is

Page 52

10:47 1 second this year in NIH grants. It was an unusual  
 10:47 2 appointment.  
 10:47 3 My chair and I felt that if I had an  
 10:48 4 outpatient practice, what if I needed to go to  
 10:48 5 Washington to do research, how could I be  
 10:48 6 responsible for Mrs. Smith if she had a headache  
 10:48 7 or needed to call. There were just logistical  
 10:48 8 problems that suggested that it would be wiser  
 10:48 9 that I do all of my clinical work on the inpatient  
 10:48 10 service. I think that for me at the time was the  
 10:48 11 right decision and that's what we did and that's  
 10:48 12 what we have continued to do through the present.  
 10:48 13 Now today we have the division of general internal  
 10:48 14 medicine which we didn't have at that time. I was  
 10:48 15 appointed to the office of the chairman. I still  
 10:48 16 am in the office of the chairman. If I were  
 10:48 17 joining the faculty today I would probably be in  
 10:48 18 the division of general internal medicine. It is  
 10:48 19 likely today I would have an outpatient practice  
 10:48 20 in addition to inpatient attending, but this is  
 10:48 21 today, that was then, and that's how things came  
 10:48 22 about.  
 10:48 23 Q Have you ever had a professional license denied?  
 10:48 24 A No, I have not.  
 10:48 25 Q Have you ever had a professional license

Page 53

10:49 1 suspended, revoked or limited?  
 10:49 2 A No.  
 10:49 3 Q Have you ever had any disciplinary action taken  
 10:49 4 against you?  
 10:49 5 A No.  
 10:49 6 Q I believe your CV says that you published three  
 10:49 7 books, not your CV, your expert report, Exhibit 2  
 10:49 8 at Page 1 says you published three books, more  
 10:49 9 than 30 original articles concerning the history  
 10:49 10 of medicine, and numerous book reviews. Were the  
 10:49 11 articles and book reviews peer reviewed?  
 10:49 12 A The articles were peer reviewed. To my knowledge  
 10:49 13 the book reviews were not, would not be common for  
 10:49 14 a book review to be peer reviewed. It is common  
 10:49 15 practice in the history of medicine for articles  
 10:49 16 to be peer reviewed and most, if not all, of those  
 10:50 17 articles were peer reviewed. For book review  
 10:50 18 generally either depending on the journal, if it  
 10:50 19 is a small journal, the editor will contact you.  
 10:50 20 If it is a large journal they will have a book  
 10:50 21 reviewer specializing in book reviews. But in  
 10:50 22 general a scholar is contacted by the journal. We  
 10:50 23 have this book, would you be interested, we would  
 10:50 24 appreciate a review from you, are you interested  
 10:50 25 and able, that type of thing. And if I'm able to,

10:50 1 I try to accommodate. But those are not peer  
 10:50 2 reviewed in the same sense that books or articles  
 10:50 3 are peer reviewed, sent out to referees. It would  
 10:50 4 just take too much time and effort.  
 10:50 5 **Q Did you ever submit an article or a book review**  
 10:50 6 **for publication that was not accepted by a**  
 10:50 7 **journal?**  
 10:50 8 **A** I have never submitted a book review that was not  
 10:50 9 accepted. I recall one or two articles early in  
 10:51 10 my career during my graduate student and history  
 10:51 11 days that was submitted and not accepted.  
 10:51 12 **Q Do you remember the topics?**  
 10:51 13 **A** Yes, I do.  
 10:51 14 **Q What were they?**  
 10:51 15 **A** One topic dealt with a man named John Shaw  
 10:51 16 Billings who is an eminent figure in 19th and  
 10:51 17 early 20th century history of medicine,  
 10:51 18 extraordinarily broad individual in each of his  
 10:51 19 contributions. He was a statistician, a public  
 10:51 20 health officer, he was a demographer, he was  
 10:51 21 involved with the US census of 1880 and 1890. He  
 10:51 22 was the creator of Index Medicus. He founded the  
 10:52 23 National Library of Medicine. Later he became the  
 10:52 24 first director of the New York Public Library, was  
 10:52 25 a quote unquote scientific influential whose views

10:53 1 in and indeed that became my first book.  
 10:53 2 Getting back to your earlier question how do  
 10:53 3 people write books. There are lots of ways to do  
 10:53 4 books. In the three books that I have done, they  
 10:53 5 have grown out of articles. I didn't just one day  
 10:53 6 decide I'm going to write a book on the history of  
 10:54 7 eugenics. I got interested in the subject, I  
 10:54 8 started writing articles on this aspect of it,  
 10:54 9 that aspect of it, term papers, this and that, the  
 10:54 10 knowledge of the field and the interest in the  
 10:54 11 subject grew, and ultimately I could see a book,  
 10:54 12 and the book grew in that fashion. But the first  
 10:54 13 article I wrote was entitled Madison Grant,  
 10:54 14 Portrait of a Racist. And it was a study of one  
 10:54 15 of the racists in the early American eugenics  
 10:54 16 movement. It was a darn good college  
 10:54 17 undergraduate paper.  
 10:54 18 I was spending the summer living with some  
 10:54 19 graduate students in the history of science at  
 10:54 20 Harvard. They were excited about the paper,  
 10:54 21 thought I should submit it for publication. My  
 10:54 22 advisor in the history and science program thought  
 10:54 23 it was a very good paper, submit it for  
 10:54 24 publication. I said okay. And I may be 19 years  
 10:54 25 old at this time, I never published a paper

10:52 1 were widely sought and consulted, to leading  
 10:52 2 public and private individuals of the time.  
 10:52 3 He was also a pioneer in the new medical  
 10:52 4 education, learning by doing and the importance of  
 10:52 5 having full-time faculty and converting students  
 10:52 6 from passive observers who would listen to  
 10:52 7 lectures to active learners who had clinical  
 10:52 8 clerkships and learn by doing and become active in  
 10:52 9 the process. So the first paper I ever wrote or  
 10:52 10 one of the first papers I ever wrote was on John  
 10:52 11 Shaw Billings. I submitted it to a journal and it  
 10:52 12 was too unwieldy and they rejected it.  
 10:52 13 **Q Do any of your publications, the articles or the**  
 10:52 14 **books, deal directly with tobacco and health?**  
 10:53 15 **A** Can I tell you about my other article that was  
 10:53 16 rejected?  
 10:53 17 **Q** Of course you can.  
 10:53 18 **A** I say this because someone stole and plagiarized  
 10:53 19 it.  
 10:53 20 **Q** Go ahead.  
 10:53 21 **A** The first article I ever wrote was the summer  
 10:53 22 between my sophomore and junior year in the  
 10:53 23 history of science program at Harvard that I  
 10:53 24 mentioned to you before. I discovered that the  
 10:53 25 history of eugenics as a subject I was interested

10:54 1 before, there is that excitement of seeing your  
 10:55 2 name in print. I didn't need a lot of  
 10:55 3 encouragement to send this paper off.  
 10:55 4 So I said where should I send it? They said  
 10:55 5 send it to the Proceedings of the American  
 10:55 6 Philosophical Society. In retrospect that was  
 10:55 7 kind of an odd place to send it because they  
 10:55 8 usually don't accept papers that are submitted in  
 10:55 9 that fashion, but I didn't know anything better.  
 10:55 10 And fortunately they rejected it. And I remember  
 10:55 11 my advisor at Harvard asking me did you see any  
 10:55 12 referee notes? I said no, there weren't any. And  
 10:55 13 he said that's really odd, usually whether they  
 10:55 14 accept an article or not, particularly if they  
 10:55 15 don't accept an article, there are referee  
 10:55 16 comments and explanations and so forth. That's  
 10:55 17 unusual. I didn't know any better. I had never  
 10:55 18 submitted an article before. I didn't think  
 10:55 19 anything of it. But it was that paper that led me  
 10:55 20 to my college thesis. As I indicated before as my  
 10:56 21 college thesis that led me to the book in medical  
 10:56 22 school.  
 10:56 23 Flash forward four years. I'm now in the  
 10:56 24 middle of my career at John Hopkins, I've  
 10:56 25 completed the first two years of medical school,

Page 58

10:56 1 now I'm a graduate student in the history of  
 10:56 2 medicine program and I'm working full-time on my  
 10:56 3 book. I see the book, that's what I'm working on.  
 10:56 4 I came across somewhere a reference to this newly  
 10:56 5 published article called Madison Grant, Portrait  
 10:56 6 of a Racist in some obscure journal published from  
 10:56 7 the southeast part of the country. It was my  
 10:56 8 paper word for word, over 30 manuscript pages,  
 10:56 9 literally word for word.  
 10:56 10 And what clearly happened is someone who  
 10:56 11 refereed it from the American Philosophical  
 10:56 12 Society said that doesn't warrant in our paper, in  
 10:56 13 our publication, it is not a bad paper, this guy  
 10:56 14 is probably some pre-med who is never going to do  
 10:56 15 history of medicine again, I'm going to take it  
 10:57 16 for myself, I'm going to publish it someplace  
 10:57 17 obscure where it is hard to track down and I've  
 10:57 18 got a free publication. That's what happened.  
 10:57 19 And I remember thinking to myself at that  
 10:57 20 time I'm glad that it is his name on the paper and  
 10:57 21 not mine because my understanding of the subject  
 10:57 22 had grown and matured, I could see a book now that  
 10:57 23 I didn't four years ago. I could see it was not a  
 10:57 24 bad paper but I was much more mature and  
 10:57 25 sophisticated in my understanding on the subject,

Page 59

10:57 1 and I remember thinking I'm glad that it is his  
 10:57 2 name and not my name associated with it. I felt  
 10:57 3 good about myself. I had internalized some of the  
 10:57 4 proper values of publication, it is important the  
 10:57 5 quality of the work that you do, not just  
 10:57 6 publication for the sake of publication of getting  
 10:57 7 your name out, that sort of thing.  
 10:57 8 So I mentioned it to my advisor who thought  
 10:57 9 we should pursue things. I said no, let me just  
 10:58 10 finish my book and I never did anything. Years  
 10:58 11 later when I'm a little older and more mature, I  
 10:58 12 thought back and I got to tell you I was annoyed,  
 10:58 13 that that was not a nice thing that that person  
 10:58 14 did to take my paper and published it under his  
 10:58 15 name. And I tried to find it and I could not find  
 10:58 16 it. So I have never been able to take action in  
 10:58 17 that sense. So he did do a good job of burying  
 10:58 18 it. That was the other paper that was not  
 10:58 19 accepted for publication. It is out there under  
 10:58 20 someone else's name somewhere.  
 10:58 21 Q I will ask the question that I didn't let you --  
 10:58 22 that I asked before you had finished your answer.  
 10:58 23 Do any of your publications, the three books or  
 10:58 24 the more than 30 articles, or even the book  
 10:58 25 reviews, deal directly with tobacco and health or

Page 60

10:58 1 smoking and health?  
 10:58 2 MR. WOODS: Objection.  
 10:59 3 A Not directly. Indirectly in the sense that they  
 10:59 4 deal with scientific knowledge and its evolution,  
 10:59 5 and both the concepts and techniques are pertinent  
 10:59 6 to understanding the subject of tobacco and  
 10:59 7 cigarette smoking and health but they were not  
 10:59 8 specific studies of cigarette smoking or health  
 10:59 9 related issues.  
 10:59 10 Q Your cv also lists eight research grants. Were  
 10:59 11 any of those grants for research into any aspect  
 10:59 12 of cigarette smoking and human disease?  
 10:59 13 A No, they were not. They all in some fashion  
 10:59 14 supported the work that I have done on medical  
 10:59 15 education, US teaching hospitals, US medical  
 10:59 16 schools and American health care delivery system.  
 10:59 17 Q Do any of the publications, again the three books  
 10:59 18 or the 30 original articles or the numerous book  
 10:59 19 reviews, do you indicate any of those publications  
 11:00 20 that you have testified for the cigarette  
 11:00 21 industry?  
 11:00 22 A I don't indicate mainly because it never occurred  
 11:00 23 to me it would be significant; different topics,  
 11:00 24 no conflict of interest. Historians consult on  
 11:00 25 different types of topics regularly, more

Page 61

11:00 1 regularly today than in the past. I don't comment  
 11:00 2 and it did not seem to me it was necessary to do  
 11:00 3 so.  
 11:00 4 Q Who is it that you understand yourself to be  
 11:00 5 working for in this case?  
 11:00 6 A In terms of plaintiff or witness experts? I'm not  
 11:00 7 sure I understand the question. If you can  
 11:00 8 rephrase the question.  
 11:00 9 Q Do you consider yourself to be working for all of  
 11:00 10 the defendants in this case, or one particular  
 11:00 11 defendant in this case, or for a law firm that has  
 11:00 12 hired you?  
 11:00 13 A My understanding is that if I am asked to give  
 11:01 14 expert testimony in this particular subject  
 11:01 15 matter, that it applies to all of the companies  
 11:01 16 that have been listed in the defense, that is my  
 11:01 17 understanding, as opposed to Philip Morris alone  
 11:01 18 or Lorillard alone, or something of that sort.  
 11:01 19 That's my understanding.  
 11:01 20 Q This list that I had gen you before which was  
 11:01 21 Exhibit 5, that only lists the deposition  
 11:01 22 testimony and the trial testimony for the past  
 11:01 23 four years. Do you know how many other times you  
 11:01 24 have been deposed besides these six listed here?  
 11:01 25 A To the best that I can recall there was one

Page 62

11:01 1 deposition and one trial in what I call the early  
11:01 2 phase of my involvement. We are talking late  
11:02 3 eighties, early nineties. Because there was a six  
11:02 4 or seven year period that I had no contact at all  
11:02 5 with any of these issues. But back in late  
11:02 6 eighties, early nineties, there was one deposition  
11:02 7 and there was one trial.  
11:02 8 **Q What was the name of the case that the deposition**  
11:02 9 **was in?**  
11:02 10 **A The deposition was for the retrial of the**  
11:02 11 **Cipollone case. I was not a participant in the**  
11:02 12 **original Cipollone case. As you know that**  
11:02 13 **apparently is the first individual smoker case**  
11:02 14 **that was lost by the defense. Apparently the**  
11:02 15 **judge issued an order for a retrial, and I was**  
11:02 16 **originally contacted to be a witness for the**  
11:02 17 **second Cipollone trial or the retrial, whatever**  
11:03 18 **the correct terminology would be, and I did give a**  
11:03 19 **two day deposition for that. Every other**  
11:03 20 **deposition in here has been one day or even a few**  
11:03 21 **hours. That was the longest deposition that I**  
11:03 22 **have given. I don't know what that would be**  
11:03 23 **called, retrial of Cipollone, Cipollone 2, but**  
11:03 24 **that was the case.**  
11:03 25 **Q And you said you had testified at another trial**

Page 63

11:03 1 **that is not on Exhibit number 5. Do you remember**  
11:03 2 **the name of that trial?**  
11:03 3 **A Yes, I do. That would have been the Kotler case.**  
11:03 4 **That is Kotler with a K, if my memory is correct,**  
11:03 5 **K-o-t-l-e-r. It was an individual smoker case.**  
11:03 6 **The trial was held in Boston. That would have**  
11:03 7 **been, if my memory is correct, 1991, early 1991, I**  
11:03 8 **think like February of '91. And I appeared in**  
11:03 9 **that case.**  
11:04 10 **Q Do you remember the results of that case?**  
11:04 11 **A There was a verdict in favor of the defense.**  
11:04 12 **Q Just talking about depositions now. Have you ever**  
11:04 13 **testified against the tobacco industry in your**  
11:04 14 **depositions?**  
11:04 15 **A No, I have not. By testified against, you mean by**  
11:04 16 **a plaintiff?**  
11:04 17 **Q Yes. Have you ever testified for a plaintiff in**  
11:04 18 **any case, in any depositions?**  
11:04 19 **A For a plaintiff. The experience I have had to**  
11:04 20 **date has been at, the requests I have received**  
11:04 21 **come from the defense. So the involvement to this**  
11:04 22 **moment through this moment has been on the defense**  
11:04 23 **side. The answer to your question would be no, I**  
11:04 24 **have not been asked to give my testimony by a**  
11:04 25 **plaintiff.**

Page 64

11:04 1 **Q Have you always been retained by Shook Hardy?**  
11:05 2 **A No.**  
11:05 3 **Q What other firms have you been retained by?**  
11:05 4 **A I couldn't tell you precisely which firm for which**  
11:05 5 **case. If my memory gets --**  
11:05 6 **Q That's fine.**  
11:05 7 **A To me there are a string of names. But the firms**  
11:05 8 **that -- the firm other than Shook Hardy that I**  
11:05 9 **have had the most contact with is the Arnold &**  
11:05 10 **Porter law firm of Washington D.C. It was**  
11:05 11 **actually members of the Arnold & Porter law firm**  
11:05 12 **who initially contacted me back in the late**  
11:05 13 **eighties. So the work that I did at that time**  
11:05 14 **when I did my original work, the retrial of**  
11:05 15 **Cipollone, that was Arnold & Porter. There have**  
11:05 16 **been other firms as well. Arnold & Porter. If I**  
11:06 17 **were -- the third firm where I have had no recent**  
11:06 18 **contact but I had contact in the past was the**  
11:06 19 **Decker Price firm which is East Coast. There are**  
11:06 20 **individuals in their New York and Philadelphia**  
11:06 21 **office that I had contact with. So I would say**  
11:06 22 **those three firms are the ones that I have had**  
11:06 23 **most of my contact with. In the last couple of**  
11:06 24 **years it has been mainly the Shook Hardy Bacon law**  
11:06 25 **firm. At the beginning it was mainly the Arnold &**

Page 65

11:06 1 Porter law firm.  
11:06 2 **Q Do you remember who contacted you from the Arnold**  
11:06 3 **& Porter law firm?**  
11:06 4 **A Yes, I do.**  
11:06 5 **Q What was his or her name?**  
11:06 6 **A His name was and is Murray Garnick.**  
11:07 7 **Q Did he initiate the first contact with you or did**  
11:07 8 **you initiate the first contact?**  
11:07 9 **A He initiated contact with me.**  
11:07 10 **Q What was the -- did he ask you to do some kind of**  
11:07 11 **job for him?**  
11:07 12 **A Ultimately it led to that. It wasn't quite that**  
11:07 13 **simple. But he explained to me that he was with**  
11:07 14 **the Arnold & Porter law firm, that he was involved**  
11:07 15 **with the defense at least at that time of Philip**  
11:07 16 **Morris, that they had lost the Cipollone case, and**  
11:07 17 **from what he told me an important issue in the**  
11:07 18 **Cipollone case was the state of the art of our**  
11:07 19 **understanding of how we came to know that lung**  
11:08 20 **cancer was caused by cigarette smoking, and that**  
11:08 21 **they were desirous of having a witness both with**  
11:08 22 **the historical and medical qualifications to**  
11:08 23 **address this issue and speak to it credibly and in**  
11:08 24 **an objective and unbiased and fair fashion.**  
11:08 25 **It was his claim to me that in the original**

11:08 1 trial the plaintiffs had a witness who was not an  
 11:08 2 historian but speaking to history who was  
 11:08 3 distorting the facts of history and that was one  
 11:08 4 of the issues that needed to be addressed in the  
 11:08 5 retrial. They wanted their own state of the art  
 11:08 6 expert.

11:08 7 So I discussed it further with him and there  
 11:09 8 were a number of important qualifications that we  
 11:09 9 had. Number 1, would I have the freedom to pursue  
 11:09 10 this completely, independently and thoroughly in  
 11:09 11 ways that I thought were historically responsible  
 11:09 12 and necessary, and his feeling was of course we  
 11:09 13 wouldn't have it any other way. I said that I'm  
 11:09 14 going to call it as it is, I don't know what I'm  
 11:09 15 going to find. He said we have no problem with  
 11:09 16 that. I said I want complete control over this.  
 11:09 17 We wouldn't want it any other way. I was still a  
 11:09 18 bit uncomfortable basically for the reasons that  
 11:09 19 you asked before, because I do think cancer causes  
 11:09 20 smoking -- that cigarette smoking causes cancer  
 11:10 21 and we have known that since the Surgeon General's  
 11:10 22 report and there was evidence building up to it  
 11:10 23 before that. That's the common wisdom. I do  
 11:10 24 consider cigarette smoking to be one of the great  
 11:10 25 public health menaces in our country today. With

11:11 1 I'm going to do it in a thorough, responsible  
 11:11 2 fashion as I would anything I do in history,  
 11:12 3 anything I have ever done. And let's make it  
 11:12 4 clear that I'm speaking strictly historically.  
 11:12 5 I'm not commenting on cigarettes as a health  
 11:12 6 hazard. I am on record, cigarette smoking causes  
 11:12 7 lung cancer. I'm not speaking to issues of  
 11:12 8 subsequent 30, 40 years or company behavior, that  
 11:12 9 sort of thing. I'm looking strictly historically.

11:12 10 My counselors at the university thought that  
 11:12 11 was appropriate, if I did it responsibly, if I  
 11:12 12 spoke strictly historically. Murray Garnick gave  
 11:12 13 me the freedom to pursue this in a thorough,  
 11:12 14 responsible fashion and I agreed. That's how I  
 11:12 15 got started.

11:12 16 Q Who was the witness that testified at Cipollone?  
 11:12 17 A Jeffrey Harris.

11:12 18 Q And when you were reading his testimony, how did  
 11:12 19 you know that he was distorting the history?  
 11:13 20 A He violated each of the general principles of  
 11:13 21 history that I had mentioned to you before. I saw  
 11:13 22 his report and I actually had original sources.  
 11:13 23 He went so far as to commit fraud.

11:13 24 Q Did you know that, at the time you were reading  
 11:13 25 the report did you know that, or did you have to

11:10 1 my own patients if they smoke I tell them to stop.  
 11:10 2 If they don't smoke, I tell them not to start.

11:10 3 So I said well let me see the testimony of  
 11:10 4 this fellow. And I found that he was fraudulent.  
 11:10 5 He was literally changing the facts of history to  
 11:10 6 build an evidence case, literally changing the  
 11:10 7 facts of history, and it was disturbing and  
 11:10 8 troubling to me. The history in my view needs to  
 11:10 9 be represented fairly. I felt an advocate of  
 11:11 10 history, not an advocate of cigarette smoking, but  
 11:11 11 to change history to support any cause, you start  
 11:11 12 sending documents, getting x-rays before one can  
 11:11 13 discover x-ray just occurred to me there is no  
 11:11 14 limit to the mischief that can be done if you  
 11:11 15 start changing the facts to support your view of  
 11:11 16 the day. That's when I had the conversations that  
 11:11 17 I mentioned to you before with all these people at  
 11:11 18 the university, including my department chair and  
 11:11 19 medical school Dean and people of that sort, and  
 11:11 20 that's when I agreed to take the project.

11:11 21 The conditions with Murray Garnick were that  
 11:11 22 it is my project, not yours. I will certainly  
 11:11 23 alert you to what I find. I'm not going to  
 11:11 24 sugarcoat things for you. I'm going to tell you  
 11:11 25 what I find. This would be my project, not yours,

11:13 1 do some research yourself before you knew that or  
 11:13 2 believed that what he had testified to was  
 11:13 3 fraudulent?

11:13 4 A Largely the latter. He was contending in that  
 11:13 5 case that it was a scientific consensus known by  
 11:13 6 everyone that cigarette smoking causes lung cancer  
 11:14 7 in the 1930's. As a historian, even if you don't  
 11:14 8 specialize in an area, you still keep up with the  
 11:14 9 literature and there is a body of knowledge. And  
 11:14 10 I had read work about cigarettes and the history  
 11:14 11 of smoking. I had been a medical student and a  
 11:14 12 physician myself. That was different from  
 11:14 13 anything I had ever heard from anyone. So many of  
 11:14 14 the claims of the report itself violated anything  
 11:14 15 that I had ever seen written. It violated the  
 11:14 16 common teaching about the subject both from the  
 11:14 17 historical side and from the medical side that  
 11:14 18 usually points to the first Surgeon General's  
 11:14 19 point is the termination point when the consensus,  
 11:14 20 when our present consensus emerged.

11:14 21 In addition, Murray Garnick included  
 11:14 22 references that Dr. Harris used. Dr. Harris  
 11:15 23 submitted an expert report and it looked very  
 11:15 24 scholarly. He would literally -- he perpetrated  
 11:15 25 fraud. He would do things like this, Ms. Moltzen.

Page 70

11:15 1 Say, for example, Mary Jo Moltzen would write an  
11:15 2 article in the Journal of the American Medical  
11:15 3 Association in 1936 and say the following. The  
11:15 4 lung cancer appears to be increasing in frequency.  
11:15 5 We are not certain if this is real or perceived  
11:15 6 increase but certainly we think it is increasing  
11:15 7 in frequency. The cause of lung cancer is  
11:15 8 presently unknown. A number of factors have been  
11:16 9 suggested as possible causes. Then he would list  
11:16 10 15 or 20 causes, influence of pandemic of 1936,  
11:16 11 air pollution, tarring of the roads, tomato juice  
11:16 12 which was invoked for a brief while. Then he  
11:16 13 would say a few people have suggested that  
11:16 14 cigarette smoking causes lung cancer; however,  
11:16 15 there is no data at the present time to support  
11:16 16 any of these hypotheses, there is no data to  
11:16 17 support the idea that cigarette smoking causes  
11:16 18 lung cancer. At present we must consider the  
11:16 19 cause of lung cancer unknown. That's what the  
11:16 20 article would say.

11:16 21 In his expert report he would say Dr. Mary Jo  
11:16 22 Moltzen writing in the prestigious Journal of the  
11:16 23 American Medical Association in 1936 wrote, quote,  
11:16 24 cigarette smoking causes lung cancer. He would  
11:17 25 take those five words totally out of context. He

Page 71

11:17 1 would have a footnote of the citation so it would  
11:17 2 look scholarly and authoritative but it was  
11:17 3 fraudulent. As a historian I was troubled by  
11:17 4 that. Just as a laboratory scientist would be  
11:17 5 troubled by the discovery of fraud or creating  
11:17 6 data or changing data. It was extremely troubling  
11:17 7 to me to see the historical record literally  
11:17 8 distorted in that type of a fashion. And that was  
11:17 9 my conflict back in the eighties. Boy, cigarette  
11:17 10 smoking is terrible.

11:17 11 Then I saw history being misrepresented in  
11:17 12 this case, being changed, and I also very strongly  
11:17 13 felt the advocate of history and not changing the  
11:17 14 facts because of the case at hand and that's how I  
11:17 15 got started. That led to the conversations that I  
11:17 16 have related to you and that's how I agreed to  
11:17 17 take on the case.

11:18 18 **Q Garnick along with Jeffrey Harris's testimony you**  
11:18 19 **said sent you reference materials. Throughout**  
11:18 20 **that initial time when you were working for him**  
11:18 21 **did he continue to send you documents?**

11:18 22 A No, he did not. The only things that he sent me,  
11:18 23 and I don't remember the exact sequence of events  
11:18 24 because we are talking 14 years ago, but this was  
11:18 25 early. The only thing he sent me on his own was

Page 72

11:18 1 the report and the documentation of the report.  
11:18 2 And, if I recall, I asked to see that. He didn't  
11:18 3 just send it to me. It came up in the  
11:18 4 conversation, and I thought that before I made any  
11:18 5 decision about my participation I should see that  
11:18 6 report and quite frankly I don't remember if I  
11:18 7 asked to see it or if he suggested it might be  
11:18 8 useful to me in making a decision. We had a  
11:18 9 conversation of that sort. He did send me the  
11:19 10 material.

11:19 11 From that point on everything that I looked  
11:19 12 at, everything in all of my bibliographies both  
11:19 13 primary and secondary sources were things that I  
11:19 14 did on my own initiative and found on my own.  
11:19 15 That was the only thing he sent me. The sole  
11:19 16 qualification would be that they had access to a  
11:19 17 translation service and I surveyed the world's  
11:19 18 published literature and fortunately the  
11:19 19 overwhelming majority of it was in the English  
11:19 20 language and even the Scandinavian countries like  
11:19 21 that they tended to publish in English. But there  
11:19 22 were occasional papers from South America or  
11:19 23 Germany or France where I didn't speak the  
11:19 24 language and thought it was important to review it  
11:19 25 and I asked him if he could have them translated

Page 73

11:20 1 for me, so that was my request. They had some  
11:20 2 sort of translation service, so at some future  
11:20 3 time I would get the translated version of  
11:20 4 articles that I asked myself to see.

11:20 5 **Q That was going to be one of my later questions.**

11:20 6 **Do you speak any foreign languages?**

11:20 7 A I used to be okay at Spanish but I'm not now.

11:20 8 **Q Do you read any foreign languages?**

11:20 9 A I used to be pretty good at Spanish but I'm not  
11:20 10 now. There were some Spanish articles that I

11:20 11 wanted to see, and rather than trust my Spanish, I  
11:20 12 asked for the translation service.

11:20 13 **Q During that initial project from Mr. Garnick did**  
11:20 14 **you have other meetings than the initial**  
11:20 15 **conversation with him?**

11:20 16 A Well, the initial conversation or two, I don't  
11:20 17 remember if they were one or two or three, early  
11:20 18 conversations, which led to my examination of the  
11:21 19 Harris report, the claims he made, as I said what  
11:21 20 was troubling to me was the way he went about  
11:21 21 making the claims, that led to my undertaking the  
11:21 22 project that I did to study the history of our  
11:21 23 understanding of the causes of lung cancer and  
11:21 24 particularly in relation to cigarette smoking.

11:21 25 That was 1988, 1989 that I did that project. And,

11:21 1 as I said before, this once I got going was  
 11:21 2 totally my own initiative and direction and there  
 11:21 3 was no outside interference. There wasn't even a  
 11:21 4 glimpse of it. I did it as I would any historical  
 11:21 5 project of my own for publication. I don't recall  
 11:21 6 exactly, but over that time every few months we  
 11:21 7 have a meeting and I would present my findings and  
 11:22 8 we would discuss things.

11:22 9 **Q Only to him or were there other attorneys also at**  
 11:22 10 **these meetings?**

11:22 11 A At that time there were generally other attorneys.

11:22 12 **Q What were the most number of attorneys that were**  
 11:22 13 **in any of these meetings?**

11:22 14 A The most? Not all meetings were that large, but  
 11:22 15 there were meetings where there might have been  
 11:22 16 eight or 10. Most would be smaller with Murray  
 11:22 17 and one or two other people. I would say  
 11:22 18 typically there might be two or three attorneys.  
 11:22 19 But to answer your question what was the most?  
 11:22 20 I'm guessing eight or 10.

11:22 21 **Q Let's get back from our shortcut to Mr. Garnick**  
 11:22 22 **and go back to, we were talking about the times**  
 11:22 23 **you have been deposed and my next question is have**  
 11:23 24 **you always testified as an expert witness as**  
 11:23 25 **opposed to a fact witness? If you don't know the**

11:24 1 they decided not to use me, or the cases went  
 11:24 2 away, I don't know. You understand this aspect.  
 11:24 3 I don't. I have not testified in any of the cases  
 11:24 4 for which I was deposed. Conversely, in each of  
 11:24 5 the cases for which, and there have been counting  
 11:25 6 Kotler in 1991 a total I believe of five, in none  
 11:25 7 of those cases was I deposed. Somehow calls came,  
 11:25 8 can you testify. So there were no depositions.  
 11:25 9 And there have been cases that I have declined to  
 11:25 10 testify for on tobacco related issues and other  
 11:25 11 issues largely because of other obligations and  
 11:25 12 lack of time.

11:25 13 **Q Have you prepared expert reports for all of the**  
 11:25 14 **cases that I have on Exhibit number 5?**

11:25 15 A I don't think so. And the reason for that is this  
 11:26 16 disconnect between depositions and trials.  
 11:26 17 Because for the Williams trial, Anderson trial,  
 11:26 18 there are four trials listed here, and I do not  
 11:26 19 recall having a statement such as the one that we  
 11:26 20 have for here. There was a call, a trial is  
 11:26 21 coming up, are you available, are you willing to  
 11:26 22 do so. I could be mistaken, and maybe there was  
 11:26 23 an expert statement from one of those, but in  
 11:26 24 general I do not remember expert statements for  
 11:26 25 the trials. There were expert statements that I

11:23 1 differences, I will be glad to tell you.

11:23 2 A Please explain it to me. I don't understand.

11:23 3 **Q A fact witness would be someone who would not be**  
 11:23 4 **paid for and they would, let's say in a car**  
 11:23 5 **accident, they would be on the side of the road**  
 11:23 6 **watching the accident and coming to court and**  
 11:23 7 **explaining what happened. Whereas the tire expert**  
 11:23 8 **or the brake expert might come in and say in most**  
 11:23 9 **cases by looking at these tread marks my expertise**  
 11:23 10 **says that he didn't put on the brakes. Have you**  
 11:23 11 **always testified as an expert as opposed to a**  
 11:23 12 **fact?**

11:23 13 A It is my understanding the answer would be yes,  
 11:23 14 that I have always been an expert witness, as you  
 11:23 15 have defined it.

11:23 16 **Q Have you ever been retained and prepared an expert**  
 11:23 17 **report like this but then you did not have to**  
 11:23 18 **testify at either deposition or trial?**

11:23 19 MR. WOODS: objection.

11:24 20 **Q Not counting -- no.**

11:24 21 A There are a couple of dimensions to that reply.  
 11:24 22 One I find very humorous. I have never at least  
 11:24 23 to date testified in a trial for which I have been  
 11:24 24 deposed. The depositions that I have given for  
 11:24 25 whatever reason either the cases were settled or

11:26 1 remember for most of the depositions, but not for  
 11:26 2 the trials.

11:26 3 **Q That's not unusual. But my question, now let's**  
 11:26 4 **twist this around. Have you ever written,**  
 11:26 5 **however, an expert report, and then you were never**  
 11:27 6 **called for the deposition and you were never**  
 11:27 7 **called to testify at trial? Can you remember an**  
 11:27 8 **expert report like that?**

11:27 9 A That has happened. I couldn't give you the names  
 11:27 10 of the cases. But largely it has to do with  
 11:27 11 individual smoker cases and I might receive a call  
 11:27 12 in an earlier period from Arnold & Porter or more  
 11:27 13 recently from Dave Woods at Shook, Hardy & Bacon  
 11:27 14 and say there is a case in Vermont that has been  
 11:27 15 put up, in two years it might go to trial, can we  
 11:27 16 list you as a witness, and sometimes I will say  
 11:27 17 okay, fine, often there is an expert statement  
 11:27 18 that I sign associated with that and then nothing  
 11:27 19 ever happens, the case is dropped. The expert  
 11:27 20 statements would be very similar to the one that  
 11:28 21 you have seen for this case, but that has  
 11:28 22 happened. That for whatever reason the case is  
 11:28 23 dropped, dismissed, goes away, I don't know. But  
 11:28 24 I never hear anything further. As I have also  
 11:28 25 mentioned, sometimes I'm not able to testify if

Page 78

11:28 1 I'm too busy.

11:28 2 Q Do you have any idea, an estimate of the number of

11:28 3 times that you have written a report and it has

11:28 4 never gone any further?

11:28 5 MR. WOODS: Objection.

11:28 6 A I'm not sure --

11:28 7 Q If not, that's fine.

11:28 8 A -- what you mean by going further. Do you mean

11:28 9 the case being dropped?

11:28 10 Q Deposition or trial. You have written an expert

11:28 11 report but you have not been sworn, given sworn

11:28 12 deposition testimony or sworn trial testimony. Do

11:28 13 you have an estimate of the number of times?

11:28 14 A My guesstimate, I will put guesstimate rather than

11:28 15 estimate, we are not talking a huge number of

11:28 16 cases. We are talking a handful.

11:28 17 Q Five?

11:29 18 A Three, four, five. That is a guesstimate. It

11:29 19 could be as low as one or two, maybe even seven or

11:29 20 eight. I don't know. I'm just working away as a

11:29 21 doctor and trying to do my book and I get a call

11:29 22 from Dave, from Mr. Woods, we got a case in a

11:29 23 couple of years in Austin, Texas, can we list you,

11:29 24 and I said well, as far as I know my schedule is

11:29 25 open in a couple of years, go ahead and list me.

Page 79

11:29 1 That has happened a few times, three, four, five,

11:29 2 I'm guessing at that number.

11:29 3 Q I have asked you this question as far as

11:29 4 depositions went and I have given you my

11:29 5 definition of a fact witness versus an expert

11:29 6 witness but that was with depositions. So the

11:29 7 question again now for trial testimony. Have you

11:29 8 ever testified -- have you always testified as an

11:29 9 expert witness at trial?

11:29 10 MR. WOODS: objection.

11:29 11 Q Rather than a fact witness?

11:29 12 MR. WOODS: Same objection.

11:30 13 A As far as I understand from the definitions that

11:30 14 you have given me, I have been an expert witness

11:30 15 at trial.

11:30 16 Q In Deposition Exhibit 5 which lists the trials and

11:30 17 depositions over the last four years, in each of

11:30 18 those four trials and those six depositions that

11:30 19 you have testified at, did your opinions -- did

11:30 20 your testimony always deal with medical knowledge

11:30 21 and the relationship to smoking and health or

11:30 22 smoking and disease?

11:30 23 MR. WOODS: objection.

11:30 24 A The testimony that I have given in each of these

11:31 25 cases has been very similar. It has always been

Page 80

11:31 1 historical. It has always been on the evolution

11:31 2 of our understanding of the causes of lung cancer

11:31 3 and particularly in relation to cigarette smoking

11:31 4 so it has been similar historical testimony, early

11:31 5 20th century culminating with the Surgeon

11:31 6 General's report in '64. There is the same --

11:31 7 nothing has changed about that from one deposition

11:31 8 or trial to another.

11:31 9 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record

11:31 10 for a tape change. The time is 11:27 AM.

11:40 11 (Short recess was taken.)

11:40 12 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: We are back on the

11:40 13 record. The time is 11:35 AM.

11:40 14 Q Dr. Ludmerer, when you are working on one of the

11:40 15 tobacco cases, what percentage of your total, I

11:40 16 will let you use the time period, your total

11:40 17 workday, your work week, your work month is

11:40 18 devoted to working on the tobacco litigation?

11:40 19 A I would estimate that for the duration of this

11:40 20 period that you have here on Exhibit 5, that the

11:40 21 last four years which is around the time that my

11:40 22 participation resumed, I think I mentioned to you

11:41 23 that I had that early activity the late eighties,

11:41 24 early nineties, then literally no contact at all

11:41 25 for roughly a six year period and then things

Page 81

11:41 1 resumed somewhere around here. I would estimate

11:41 2 that since the resumption of my involvement with

11:41 3 the depositions and trials that you have listed

11:41 4 here, through the present, that my work as an

11:41 5 expert witness accounts for five percent or less

11:41 6 of my professional time. I would estimate

11:41 7 probably closer to three or four percent. I am

11:41 8 talking in terms of a year. Obviously today all

11:41 9 day long is the deposition. But I'm not going to

11:41 10 be deposed -- whenever the deposition is over I'm

11:41 11 going to be back doing my regular thing.

11:41 12 Cumulatively over the course of a year I would say

11:41 13 somewhere between three and five percent of my

11:41 14 time is involved with these types of -- these

11:42 15 types of cases.

11:42 16 Q Has your medical or business conduct ever been

11:42 17 subject of investigation by a professional review

11:42 18 organization?

11:42 19 A No.

11:42 20 Q Has it ever been the subject of review or

11:42 21 investigation by a law enforcement authority?

11:42 22 A Are you talking about my work as a doctor?

11:42 23 Q Your work as a doctor.

11:42 24 A No, I have never had any questions or

11:42 25 investigations of that sort.

Page 82

11:42 1 Q Have you ever brought a lawsuit?  
 11:42 2 A No.  
 11:42 3 Q Have you ever been sued?  
 11:42 4 A No.  
 11:42 5 Q The judge in this particular case is Judge Gladys  
 11:42 6 Kessler. Have you ever appeared before Judge  
 11:42 7 Kessler before?  
 11:42 8 A To my knowledge I haven't. I do not recognize  
 11:42 9 that name.  
 11:42 10 Q If you look at your expert report that is Exhibit  
 11:43 11 2, on Page 1, the third paragraph and it says, "I  
 11:43 12 understand that defendants may call me to testify  
 11:43 13 in this matter on the issue of the evolution of  
 11:43 14 medical knowledge of smoking and disease." I want  
 11:43 15 to qualify that statement a little bit. When you  
 11:43 16 talk about the medical knowledge of smoking and  
 11:43 17 disease, are you limiting it to the scientific and  
 11:43 18 medical community?  
 11:43 19 A That is correct. In this report the term medical  
 11:43 20 and scientific are often used interchangeably.  
 11:43 21 I'm referring to our scientific understanding, or  
 11:43 22 medical understanding to use a synonym, in  
 11:43 23 distinction to popular perceptions, common  
 11:43 24 knowledge. Those are issues that I do not  
 11:43 25 address. If I may make one other qualification

Page 83

11:44 1 that I just happened to notice. I'm really  
 11:44 2 talking cigarette smoking, not all smoking. I'm  
 11:44 3 not talking about pipes and cigars and other forms  
 11:44 4 and earlier forms of smoking. If I were writing  
 11:44 5 this today I think I would insert the adjective  
 11:44 6 cigarette before the word smoking.  
 11:44 7 Q What about that last word, disease, would you keep  
 11:44 8 that as all disease or would you change that to  
 11:44 9 lung cancer?  
 11:44 10 A I think I would essentially respond as I did  
 11:44 11 before, the focus is lung cancer. But you cannot  
 11:44 12 investigate this literature without discovering  
 11:44 13 that cigarette smoking became associated in some  
 11:44 14 cases in the causal fashion with other diseases as  
 11:44 15 well. So the focus is lung cancer on the other  
 11:44 16 hand, particularly in the pre 1964 period. I  
 11:44 17 certainly did learn of other associations.  
 11:44 18 Q And again when we are talking about medical  
 11:44 19 knowledge, are you limiting this to knowledge of  
 11:45 20 those in the United States, the scientific and  
 11:45 21 medical community in the United States, or do your  
 11:45 22 opinions deal with world wide?  
 11:45 23 A The latter, world wide. The scientific community  
 11:45 24 as you know is an international community.  
 11:45 25 Workers in United States read publications in the

Page 84

11:45 1 Netherlands or France or England and vice versa.  
 11:45 2 And the literature that I consulted was  
 11:45 3 international literature. So two important  
 11:45 4 qualifications to reiterate are scientific  
 11:45 5 community in distinction to popular perceptions  
 11:45 6 and that indeed the international views, not  
 11:45 7 necessarily US views alone.  
 11:45 8 Q When you talk about the medical and scientific  
 11:45 9 community, does that include the scientists who  
 11:45 10 worked for the tobacco industry?  
 11:45 11 A It does if they published in the subject.  
 11:45 12 Scientists from any industry are part of the  
 11:46 13 bonafide members of the scientific community. I  
 11:46 14 studied the published scientific literature and  
 11:46 15 insofar as they have -- as they may publish  
 11:46 16 articles on the subject, then I encountered those  
 11:46 17 in my research and encountered those in my view.  
 11:46 18 I did not take it upon myself to examine  
 11:46 19 laboratory notebooks, unpublished work of anyone  
 11:46 20 whether they be at the NIH or medical school or  
 11:46 21 cancer institute or at a company.  
 11:46 22 Q And because the research studies that you included  
 11:46 23 in your expert report only are published works,  
 11:46 24 does that put the context, as you described  
 11:47 25 earlier, out of balance?

Page 85

11:47 1 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 11:47 2 A In my judgment absolutely not. It is an excellent  
 11:47 3 question and one that is always enjoyable talking  
 11:47 4 about with students and so forth. The scientific  
 11:47 5 literature is the currency of science. It is the  
 11:47 6 accepted way to understand the state of knowledge  
 11:47 7 of the original papers, the review articles, the  
 11:47 8 textbooks or whatever they may be. So now I  
 11:47 9 should say, and I'm speaking as an historian now,  
 11:47 10 that interesting questions can be asked and  
 11:47 11 interesting information can be learned in select  
 11:47 12 cases looking at how a certain scientist may have  
 11:47 13 come to the published view that they did. How did  
 11:48 14 Banting and Best discover insulin. There was an  
 11:48 15 outstanding book on that subject by a fine  
 11:48 16 scholar, Michael Bliss, who looks at the  
 11:48 17 unpublished work and the notebooks and how did the  
 11:48 18 ideas develop, it allows you to ask questions such  
 11:48 19 as how hypotheses formed, how are they tested,  
 11:48 20 what is the reality of life like in the  
 11:48 21 laboratory.  
 11:48 22 Another great scholar in my opinion in the  
 11:48 23 history of medicine, in the history of science, is  
 11:48 24 Larry Holmes from Yale who has published a number  
 11:48 25 of important books, very esoteric and take a lot

Page 86

11:48 1 of scientific understanding to read, but he has  
 11:48 2 looked at Pasteur and Claude Bernard, I could give  
 11:48 3 you some of the names, he has looked at Krebs,  
 11:48 4 the notebooks, and how did ideas develop. This is  
 11:49 5 a sub theme in the history of medicine, not many  
 11:49 6 people have done this type of research. There is  
 11:49 7 a certain esoteric quality to it going through  
 11:49 8 laboratory notebooks and that type of thing. I do  
 11:49 9 wish to mention for completion. In general every  
 11:49 10 published paper in any science is a pre-history,  
 11:49 11 goes through drafts, you are always hammering it  
 11:49 12 out in seminars and conferences and there is a  
 11:49 13 pre-history to anything that is published. To  
 11:49 14 look at the published literature what finally gets  
 11:49 15 to the New England Journal of Medicine or Nature  
 11:49 16 or Science or Cell or whatever the journal may  
 11:49 17 happen to be, to review that literature is  
 11:49 18 considered very acceptable in terms of  
 11:49 19 understanding the current thinking of the time and  
 11:49 20 also review articles are very helpful too.  
 11:49 21 Sometimes authors will --  
 11:49 22 **Q I'm sorry, what is a review article?**  
 11:49 23 **A Review articles. By that I mean when you will**  
 11:49 24 **take an expert in the subject who will review the**  
 11:49 25 **state of knowledge 2002 on a certain subject or**

Page 87

11:50 1 1948 on a certain subject. Not reporting a new  
 11:50 2 finding, but what do we know about this subject,  
 11:50 3 covering it from different aspects, from the  
 11:50 4 published literature. A synthesis and  
 11:50 5 interpretation of current understanding. You  
 11:50 6 could almost call it a textbook chapter that  
 11:50 7 appears in a journal as opposed to a book. Those  
 11:50 8 are helpful too. But using the published  
 11:50 9 scientific medical literature is a very acceptable  
 11:50 10 technique.  
 11:50 11 **Q I think it is on Page 2 of your report you say,**  
 11:50 12 **throw away sentence, very top, "A summary of the**  
 11:50 13 **opinions that I am expected to offer at trial is**  
 11:50 14 **set forth below." Are the opinions that are set**  
 11:51 15 **forth below in this report accurate and complete**  
 11:51 16 **as of today?**  
 11:51 17 **A In my judgment, yes.**  
 11:51 18 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record.  
 11:51 19 The time is 11:46 AM.  
 12:27 20 (Lunch recess was taken.)  
 12:27 21 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Back on the record.  
 12:27 22 The time is 12:23 PM.  
 12:28 23 **Q Dr. Ludmerer, Page 1 of your expert report, the**  
 12:28 24 **fourth paragraph, the first sentence says, "In**  
 12:28 25 **conducting my study, I followed standard**

Page 88

12:28 1 historical methods." Now I'm not asking for the  
 12:28 2 specific methods here because we will go into your  
 12:28 3 primary and secondary sources in detail. But when  
 12:28 4 you say standard historical methods, what do you  
 12:28 5 mean by that term?  
 12:28 6 **A I'm referring to the discussion of techniques that**  
 12:28 7 **we had before, the importance of understanding the**  
 12:28 8 **context of the events that you are studying.**  
 12:28 9 Looking at secondary literature, both to get a  
 12:28 10 sense of what other people have said about the  
 12:28 11 subject as well as to give you a context to help  
 12:28 12 interpret the events that you, yourself, are  
 12:28 13 studying. Then appropriate use of primary  
 12:28 14 sources. As we discussed before, the specific  
 12:29 15 primary sources will depend on the topic. But  
 12:29 16 making certain that the primary sources are  
 12:29 17 identified, that they are looked at in a  
 12:29 18 comprehensive fashion, not in a selective fashion.  
 12:29 19 Either you look at everything or if you are not  
 12:29 20 able to look at everything, you have a system to  
 12:29 21 make sure that what you do see is representative  
 12:29 22 and not biased, that you report accurately.  
 12:29 23 Theoretical framework about the history of  
 12:29 24 medicine, a seasoned historian will bring into the  
 12:29 25 project to begin with what you already know in the

Page 89

12:29 1 general framework. The text of things we talked  
 12:29 2 about before. But specifically understanding the  
 12:29 3 context through secondary sources, and then  
 12:29 4 identifying the appropriate primary sources and  
 12:29 5 using them in an appropriate fashion.  
 12:29 6 **Q That paragraph goes on to say, "My research had**  
 12:30 7 **two parts; first I reviewed the secondary**  
 12:30 8 **literature, that is the literature that people**  
 12:30 9 **wrote after the fact." What do you mean by after**  
 12:30 10 **the fact?**  
 12:30 11 **A Essentially someone looking back at a later point**  
 12:30 12 **of time reflecting on things. Historical**  
 12:30 13 **research -- excuse me, historical publications by**  
 12:30 14 **definition are secondary publications. A**  
 12:30 15 **biography of Abraham Lincoln would be a secondary**  
 12:30 16 **source in contrast to letters that he may have**  
 12:30 17 **written himself, diaries he may have kept,**  
 12:30 18 **speeches or articles he may have written which**  
 12:30 19 **would be considered primary sources.**  
 12:30 20 **Q What about a biography written, let's just say**  
 12:30 21 **that Lincoln had written a biography in 1862 or an**  
 12:31 22 **autobiography. Is that a primary or secondary**  
 12:31 23 **source?**  
 12:31 24 **A Well it depends on the subject. And one can get**  
 12:31 25 **philosophical and debate some of the esoteric**

method

Page 90

12:31 1 aspects of these things. If a scholar today were  
 12:31 2 writing a biography of Lincoln and Lincoln had  
 12:31 3 written an autobiography in 1882, which of course  
 12:31 4 he couldn't have, he was already dead, but say he  
 12:31 5 had done so in 1862 when he was still alive, I  
 12:31 6 would probably tend to define that as primary  
 12:31 7 source. Because even though he is giving his  
 12:31 8 interpretations and assessments and still at the  
 12:31 9 time, I would suspect it would have a greater  
 12:31 10 value as a primary source to today's historians  
 12:31 11 than as a secondary source. These things can get  
 12:31 12 esoteric.

12:31 13 For example, what if you have primary sources  
 12:32 14 in a certain field, important articles in the  
 12:32 15 history of the evolution of our understanding of  
 12:32 16 lung cancer and cigarette smoking, maybe the most  
 12:32 17 important clinical and pathological studies. Well  
 12:32 18 essentially they are primary sources, they were  
 12:32 19 published at the time. But what if you collect  
 12:32 20 these into a published book that you can use in a  
 12:32 21 classroom so you are reading it. Historians have  
 12:32 22 debated whether that becomes a secondary source or  
 12:32 23 primary source. It is possible to at the edge of  
 12:32 24 to engage in debate about what constitutes a  
 12:32 25 primary source and a secondary source. In general

Page 92

12:34 1 research cancer was if you are looking the mid  
 12:34 2 19th century when it was an area that you went in  
 12:34 3 only if you wanted to have a dead end career in  
 12:34 4 science because the intellectual challenges was so  
 12:34 5 great at that time. I read about the NIH and the  
 12:34 6 development of research support for biomedical  
 12:34 7 research. These are examples of the types of  
 12:34 8 subjects that I read about when I did my quote  
 12:34 9 unquote secondary research.

12:34 10 **Q How did you select those particular topics?**  
 12:35 11 **MR. WOODS: objection.**

12:35 12 **A** Experience as a scholar and teacher in the history  
 12:35 13 of medicine made it clear that these were areas  
 12:35 14 that were very pertinent to understanding the  
 12:35 15 evolution of our understanding of the causes of  
 12:35 16 lung cancer. Public health, the history of  
 12:35 17 cancer, the history of cigarette smoking, the  
 12:35 18 history of research support, they were from  
 12:35 19 experience and previous research and previous  
 12:35 20 teaching I had done and I knew these were relevant  
 12:35 21 considerations to understanding that subject.

12:35 22 **Q Were your selections, do you believe your**  
 12:35 23 **selections were comprehensive?**

12:35 24 **A** I believe that they were thorough and that they  
 12:35 25 were representative. I have a list that is pretty

Page 91

12:32 1 it is pretty straight forward. I think that today  
 12:32 2 Lincoln's autobiography from 1962 that would  
 12:32 3 probably be a primary source.

12:33 4 **Q What processes did you use to -- you said that you**  
 12:33 5 **shouldn't try to be selective, but at some point**  
 12:33 6 **in time you had to select your secondary**  
 12:33 7 **resources?**

12:33 8 **A** That's correct.

12:33 9 **Q What kind of process did you use to choose which**  
 12:33 10 **secondary resources?**

12:33 11 **A** Secondary? Well from my general background as an  
 12:33 12 historian in medicine, I identified topics that I  
 12:33 13 thought would be useful in providing a context,  
 12:33 14 understanding this debate and this intellectual  
 12:33 15 evolution. These sources were listed in the  
 12:33 16 bibliography, secondary bibliography. Examples,  
 12:33 17 what have others -- I'm talking 1988 and '89 when  
 12:33 18 I did this project. What accounts of the tobacco  
 12:34 19 controversy have been written, so I read pretty  
 12:34 20 much all of the published accounts that have been  
 12:34 21 written to that point in time to get a sense of  
 12:34 22 the feel and what others were saying. I read work  
 12:34 23 in the history of public and the history of  
 12:34 24 preventive medicine, the history of cancer. It  
 12:34 25 was interesting to learn how barren a field of

Page 93

12:35 1 extensive. I looked at everything I could find on  
 12:36 2 the subjects that I've related to you so I believe  
 12:36 3 that -- in fact, the second -- the study of  
 12:36 4 secondary literature was one chapter of the  
 12:36 5 research project, an entire chapter that I  
 12:36 6 undertook at the time. We are talking 1988, 1989,  
 12:36 7 it was in and of itself, if I recall correctly,  
 12:36 8 the subject of one of the handful of meetings that  
 12:36 9 took place between myself and attorneys  
 12:36 10 representing some of the defense firms. So I did  
 12:36 11 do it I think in a very fair and comprehensive and  
 12:36 12 thorough fashion.

12:36 13 You have to set boundaries. I did not seek  
 12:36 14 out to be exhaustive. I think it was pretty  
 12:37 15 thorough and pretty comprehensive. Even more so,  
 12:37 16 and I suspect you will get into this, when I got  
 12:37 17 to the primary literature, there I made every  
 12:37 18 possible effort to be completely comprehensive, an  
 12:37 19 exhaustive effort not to miss anything, to make  
 12:37 20 sure I saw everything. The secondary literature I  
 12:37 21 think was done thoroughly and comprehensively.  
 12:37 22 But I can't say that I missed an article in a book  
 12:37 23 that might have helped.

12:37 24 **Q You just said that it was the first chapter of**  
 12:37 25 **your research project. But you are using that**

*What had been written by 1989? After 1989?  
 Kluger + all other histories written since then...  
 Cippolone case was what made them histories possible? Yes?*

12:37 1 word chapter figuratively, correct?  
 12:37 2 A Correct.  
 12:37 3 Q You didn't really write a Chapter 1?  
 12:37 4 A The first thing I did.  
 12:37 5 Q Then my next question is, as part of that initial  
 12:37 6 project for Arnold & Porter, did you produce some  
 12:37 7 kind of written document?  
 12:37 8 A No, I did not.  
 12:38 9 Q Did you review literature only in English? I'm  
 12:38 10 sorry, we are still on the secondary literature.  
 12:38 11 A That's correct. Everything that I reviewed in the  
 12:38 12 secondary literature was written in English, that  
 12:38 13 is correct.  
 12:38 14 Q And did you review any letters or correspondence  
 12:38 15 or memos that weren't in the -- that weren't found  
 12:38 16 in some publication or another?  
 12:38 17 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 12:38 18 A I'm not certain I understand that question. Could  
 12:38 19 you rephrase that please?  
 12:38 20 Q There might be some, let's just say internal  
 12:38 21 correspondence in a company that never was meant  
 12:39 22 to be published but for one reason or another  
 12:39 23 might now have found its way into a book about the  
 12:39 24 tobacco industry, let's say. So then I couldn't  
 12:39 25 say to you did you only review literature that was

12:40 1 might cite primary papers, reading someone's  
 12:40 2 letter. History of the public health movement  
 12:40 3 might have a different type of primary document,  
 12:41 4 or the public health association went on record  
 12:41 5 and such and such or president so and so wrote a  
 12:41 6 letter. I'm sure there are primary sources in the  
 12:41 7 book. I can't really speak very well at this  
 12:41 8 point to the various letters and so forth that  
 12:41 9 were cited in those books. But I would be  
 12:41 10 startled if they didn't cite themselves primary  
 12:41 11 sources. To me or to anyone reading them today  
 12:41 12 you are reading a secondary source. An historian  
 12:41 13 is writing from primary sources as well as  
 12:41 14 secondary sources. So I'm close to certain that  
 12:41 15 there are primary sources in those books.  
 12:41 16 Q Now I'm not sure where to put this next category,  
 12:41 17 whether it is primary or secondary. It probably  
 12:41 18 doesn't even matter. Let me know if it does or  
 12:41 19 not. Often in the scientific journals there will  
 12:41 20 be an article that you read and that you used as  
 12:41 21 one of your reference materials; and then either  
 12:41 22 maybe in that issue or a following issue there  
 12:41 23 will be an editorial and then maybe later there  
 12:42 24 will be back and forth letters to the editor. Did  
 12:42 25 you consider those as part of your reference

12:39 1 published because that would include those kind of  
 12:39 2 internal memorandums and letters.  
 12:39 3 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 12:39 4 Q Did you review any published letters and  
 12:39 5 memorandums?  
 12:39 6 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 12:39 7 A Are you referring from tobacco companies or in  
 12:39 8 general?  
 12:39 9 Q In general.  
 12:39 10 A I think it would be fair to say that in the review  
 12:39 11 of the secondary literature, everything was  
 12:40 12 secondary, it was published. I don't think anyone  
 12:40 13 looking at that list today would have any doubt  
 12:40 14 that that's secondary literature. Now, any time a  
 12:40 15 historian is doing a book they are going to be  
 12:40 16 primarily quoting documents. So you can read,  
 12:40 17 using our example of President Lincoln, you can  
 12:40 18 read a biography of Lincoln and letters will be  
 12:40 19 quoted in that. So I really don't remember the  
 12:40 20 specifics of everything I read. But I would be  
 12:40 21 surprised if there were not primary documents  
 12:40 22 quoted in some, if not most of the secondary  
 12:40 23 sources. The nature of the documents would depend  
 12:40 24 on the nature of the book. A book on cancer  
 12:40 25 research or our history of understanding of that

12:42 1 materials?  
 12:42 2 MR. WOODS: Objection.  
 12:42 3 A Yes, I did. Certainly there frequently is give  
 12:42 4 and take in the medical and scientific literature  
 12:42 5 such as you describe. An article will frequently  
 12:42 6 be accompanied by an editorial. Sometimes that  
 12:42 7 will prompt someone else to write a response that  
 12:42 8 appears in a later issue. I read all of those to  
 12:42 9 the best I could identify them in the period 1930  
 12:42 10 to 1964 and they would be considered, from my  
 12:42 11 perspective, primary sources in terms of this  
 12:42 12 project. So if someone wrote an article and then  
 12:42 13 there was an editorial in the same issue on that,  
 12:43 14 I would read the editorial as well as the article.  
 12:43 15 I would define both as primary sources.  
 12:43 16 Q Will the letters to the editor and editorials, are  
 12:43 17 they also included in your list of reference  
 12:43 18 materials?  
 12:43 19 A Insofar as I cited letters to the editor, they  
 12:43 20 would be listed and I would consider them to be  
 12:43 21 primary materials. They are part of the debate  
 12:43 22 going on in the thirties or the forties or the  
 12:43 23 fifties or the sixties or whatever it is. I did  
 12:43 24 not systematically search out letters to the  
 12:43 25 editor in the way that I systematically sought out

Page 98

12:43 1 the original articles, review articles and  
 12:43 2 editorials.  
 12:43 3 **Q Have you ever done any similar kind of review or a**  
 12:44 4 **massy of articles with the respect to any other**  
 12:44 5 **medical or scientific topic?**  
 12:44 6 **A Well the techniques that I followed for this**  
 12:44 7 **project were similar to the techniques that I**  
 12:44 8 **followed for my three books. The specifics, of**  
 12:44 9 **course, vary, but in terms of techniques and**  
 12:44 10 **methods, I would say that the approaches were**  
 12:44 11 **similar.**  
 12:44 12 **Q At the bottom of Page 1 and the top of Page 2 you**  
 12:44 13 **say, "Second, I reviewed the primary literature,**  
 12:44 14 **articles published in the scientific literature**  
 12:44 15 **between 1930 and 1964." What was your purpose in**  
 12:44 16 **reviewing the primary literature?**  
 12:45 17 **A Well the primary literature is really the language**  
 12:45 18 **of communication in science, getting back to some**  
 12:45 19 **of the conversation that we were having before**  
 12:45 20 **lunch. The published article or the official**  
 12:45 21 **response to it as an editorial might be or a**  
 12:45 22 **sounding board position might be. This is the**  
 12:45 23 **currency of science, the published scientific**  
 12:45 24 **literature, and those are considered primary**  
 12:45 25 **sources and ultimately I felt the responsibility**

Page 99

12:45 1 as a responsible historian not to draw conclusions  
 12:45 2 about this issue from what others have written  
 12:45 3 about it but to go back and see the primary data  
 12:45 4 myself. That's what really makes it original  
 12:45 5 research, when you start examining the primary  
 12:45 6 data.  
 12:45 7 You can learn a lot from secondary  
 12:45 8 literature, it certainly can help in terms of  
 12:45 9 developing a general context, certainly can help  
 12:46 10 in terms of teaching. If you are teaching a  
 12:46 11 survey course in the history of medicine, you use  
 12:46 12 the secondary literature to put together a  
 12:46 13 lecture. But it doesn't give you that same sense  
 12:46 14 of knowledge and authority of really doing the  
 12:46 15 original research yourself. In any historical  
 12:46 16 subject you need to deal with primary sources, to  
 12:46 17 get into the meat of it yourself, and this  
 12:46 18 particular case not what those in 1988 were  
 12:46 19 were saying about lung cancer but what were people  
 12:46 20 at the time saying about it. Well, there is  
 12:46 21 scientific literature. So I did a systematic,  
 12:46 22 comprehensive, indeed exhaustive review of the  
 12:46 23 worlds published scientific literature in 1930  
 12:46 24 through January, 1964.  
 12:46 25 **Q Did you first review the secondary materials and**

Page 100

12:47 1 **then start going into the primary materials?**  
 12:47 2 **A My recollection is that there was overlap. But,**  
 12:47 3 **as a generalization, I focused on the secondary**  
 12:47 4 **sources first. I could read a book at home. I**  
 12:47 5 **couldn't check out a journal from the library from**  
 12:47 6 **1938 but I could check out a book. So as a**  
 12:47 7 **generalization I did the secondary literature**  
 12:47 8 **first and the primary literature afterwards. But**  
 12:47 9 **I'm sure there was overlap. I would be finishing**  
 12:47 10 **the secondary literature, have a few extra hours**  
 12:47 11 **so I could go to the library and start the primary**  
 12:47 12 **literature. But as a generalization, the primary**  
 12:47 13 **sources after doing the secondary sources.**  
 12:47 14 **Q What process did you use to select the primary**  
 12:47 15 **literature?**  
 12:47 16 **A That was an easy one because of the availability**  
 12:48 17 **of the Index Medicus which is a bibliography to**  
 12:48 18 **the biomedical -- the published biomedical**  
 12:48 19 **literature and the same way that the reader's**  
 12:48 20 **guide is a published bibliography to popular**  
 12:48 21 **magazines and periodicals. I had to do it**  
 12:48 22 **manually because the computerized literature**  
 12:48 23 **searches weren't being done at that time.**  
 12:48 24 **Actually they were being done at that time but the**  
 12:48 25 **earlier years were not on it. But each year there**

Page 101

12:48 1 is a publication -- there is a publication called  
 12:48 2 Index Medicus. And I think issues come up  
 12:48 3 monthly, but they are bound together and each year  
 12:48 4 there is a volume. It is by year, 1930, 1931,  
 12:48 5 1932, so forth. This is an exhaustive  
 12:49 6 bibliography to the world's biomedical literature.  
 12:49 7 I'm purporting your earlier question was this US  
 12:49 8 or international. The world's scientific  
 12:49 9 literature is listed there.  
 12:49 10 And what I did was go through the categories  
 12:49 11 because the index was listed by subjects. There  
 12:49 12 may have been author index too but I did it by  
 12:49 13 subject. And I looked under four topics; lung  
 12:49 14 cancer, bronchogenic cancer -- curiously I would  
 12:49 15 have thought there would have been one entry, but  
 12:49 16 in fact there were two entries during this time,  
 12:49 17 lung cancer and bronchogenic cancer, and many  
 12:49 18 articles would actually be listed in both. But,  
 12:49 19 in fact, there were articles that for whatever  
 12:50 20 reason would be listed in lung cancer but not  
 12:50 21 under bronchogenic cancer or vice versa. So to be  
 12:50 22 complete, I looked at both. In addition, I looked  
 12:50 23 under tobacco and under cigarettes. I forget if  
 12:50 24 it was tobacco smoking and cigarettes. There were  
 12:50 25 two tobacco-related entries that were present. So

Page 102

12:50 1 there were a total of four entries. I literally  
12:50 2 wrote every one of them down. I tend to write on  
12:50 3 these notebooks too except I use the smaller  
12:50 4 version of this. So I would go to the Index  
12:50 5 Medicus, 1930, I wrote down every article from  
12:50 6 each of the four categories that I mentioned. And  
12:50 7 in my judgment, as far as humanly possible, I had  
12:50 8 in front of me the world's scientific literature  
12:51 9 on that subject. Included original articles,  
12:51 10 clinical reports, case descriptions, editorials.  
12:51 11 It did not index letters to the editor. I did  
12:51 12 that from 1930 to January, 1964. I wrote down the  
12:51 13 complete list, every article I could find under  
12:51 14 those topics so I had as close to humanly possible  
12:51 15 I believe the world's scientific literature on  
12:51 16 that subject. Then I went and read every one of  
12:51 17 them.  
12:51 18 **Q Do you remember how many articles that was?**  
12:51 19 **A Yes, and they presumably have been made available**  
12:51 20 **to you as part of the materials. But I would say**  
12:51 21 **all together in the range of 1100, 1200 articles**  
12:51 22 **with the number of articles increasing**  
12:52 23 **significantly after 1950 reflecting the watershed**  
12:52 24 **year of 1950 and how intensely this became a**  
12:52 25 **subject of scientific inquiry at that time. But**

Page 103

12:52 1 if you were to take the three -- I have three  
12:52 2 bibliographies. One is 1930 to 1950. That made  
12:52 3 sense because 1950 was such a watershed year in  
12:52 4 view of everyone who had studied the subject. I  
12:52 5 agree with that interpretation.  
12:52 6 Then there is a second bibliography 1950 to  
12:52 7 1959. The only reason it stops in 1959 is that  
12:52 8 the number of articles each year is increasing  
12:52 9 and, as I mentioned before, periodically there  
12:52 10 were meetings with the Arnold & Porter group and  
12:53 11 others who may have chosen to attend in which I  
12:53 12 would discuss the findings and what I found and  
12:53 13 here is what we have. There was so much material  
12:53 14 after 1950 that we decided to have a conversation  
12:53 15 in 1950 to 1959 and then I completed this on 1960  
12:53 16 to January, 1964.  
12:53 17 **Q I'm going to hand you what has been marked as**  
12:53 18 **Ludmerer Deposition Exhibit 7. Can you identify**  
12:53 19 **this one?**  
12:53 20 **A Yes, I can. This is Exhibit 7. This is a copy of**  
12:53 21 **the bibliography and my comments having read the**  
12:53 22 **articles from the 1930 to 1950 period. Between**  
12:54 23 **that period there were 276, in the range of 280**  
12:54 24 **articles, plus or minus one or two, I identified**  
12:54 25 **from the Index Medicus in the fashion that I**

Page 104

12:54 1 described to you. I would have my notebook, I  
12:54 2 would have the Index Medicus, I would be in the  
12:54 3 library to do this. I would look under lung  
12:54 4 cancer, bronchogenic cancer, under cigarettes,  
12:54 5 under tobacco, and I literally wrote down every  
12:54 6 article that appeared in Index Medicus. I did not  
12:54 7 duplicate. So if there was an article that was  
12:54 8 listed under lung cancer and under bronchogenic  
12:55 9 cancer, as much as possible I only entered it  
12:55 10 once. I'm sure I slipped a few times but  
12:55 11 essentially I entered it one time.  
12:55 12 Then after generating the bibliography, I  
12:55 13 went and read the articles and evaluated what the  
12:55 14 author had to say. This is comprehensive.  
12:55 15 Everything is there. It is representative. All  
12:55 16 views are there. It meets sound historical  
12:55 17 methodological approaches because you find out not  
12:55 18 only what people are saying but what people had to  
12:55 19 say about that view, did they accept it or not,  
12:55 20 did they reject it or not, did it create a stir.  
12:55 21 Everything is there. Then these comments over  
12:55 22 here I would read the article and sort of  
12:55 23 summarize what it was about, what the point was,  
12:55 24 etc., etc.  
12:55 25 **Q Dr. Ludmerer, would you agree that this document**

Page 105

12:55 1 is very difficult to read?  
12:55 2 **A Yes, I would.**  
12:56 3 **Q Do you have your original notes?**  
12:56 4 **A No.**  
12:56 5 **Q Do you know where they are?**  
12:56 6 **A Plaintiff attorney Mark Edell took them from us in**  
12:56 7 **1990, promised to return them, never has done so.**  
12:56 8 **Q I just want to put on the record the United States**  
12:56 9 **reserves its right to depose Dr. Ludmerer on these**  
12:56 10 **reference materials should the United States ever**  
12:56 11 **obtain a copy that it can read.**  
12:56 12 **A May I put on the record that as far as these**  
12:56 13 **things go, I would love to have my originals**  
12:56 14 **returned to me. I cannot read these any better**  
12:56 15 **than you can. But a plaintiff attorney from**  
12:56 16 **another case, not related to the US government,**  
12:56 17 **took them and never returned them.**  
12:56 18 **Q Do you remember the name of the law firm?**  
12:56 19 **A I remember the name of the lawyer but not the law**  
12:56 20 **firm. The lawyer was Mark Edell.**  
12:56 21 **Q Was it in the Cipollone case?**  
12:56 22 **A This had to do with the retrial of Cipollone.**  
12:56 23 **Mark Edell was the attorney who won the original**  
12:56 24 **verdict. He was the attorney who was leading**  
12:57 25 **things for the retrial of the case and he was the**

12:57 1 attorney somewhere in New Jersey, who deposed me  
 12:57 2 on my first deposition, the one I mentioned  
 12:57 3 before, for the retrial of the Cipollone case, in  
 12:57 4 1990. And I had my originals there at his  
 12:57 5 request. And instead of going through copies, we  
 12:57 6 went through originals. He said you know,  
 12:57 7 wouldn't it be great if these were typed up and  
 12:57 8 transcribed. I said fine. Then he said you know,  
 12:57 9 I would like my staff to transcribe these so we  
 12:57 10 will all have a written copy of it. Your  
 12:57 11 handwriting is not very good. Even on the  
 12:57 12 original my handwriting is not always very good.  
 12:57 13 To tell you the truth, I was a little  
 12:58 14 apprehensive. I felt that -- I was concerned  
 12:58 15 about getting them back. But it wasn't my call  
 12:58 16 and the attorneys from Arnold & Porter said that's  
 12:58 17 satisfactory with us, please return them in a  
 12:58 18 prompt fashion. He said I promise I will do so.  
 12:58 19 He has never returned them. For awhile I know  
 12:58 20 attorneys from Arnold & Porter were periodically  
 12:58 21 calling him but they have just given up. He has  
 12:58 22 never returned them. I don't even know if they  
 12:58 23 exist. I don't know if they are in an office  
 12:58 24 drawer somewhere or if he destroyed them. I have  
 12:58 25 never seen them back.

13:00 1 the date 2/16/91.  
 13:00 2 A That's correct.  
 13:00 3 Q So my question is, if you were doing this in '88  
 13:00 4 and '89, why do I keep running across that date?  
 13:00 5 A The reason that you run across different dates is  
 13:00 6 that I consulted this at different times.  
 13:00 7 Q So that's a notation of a day of consultation?  
 13:01 8 A Right, because I did the project in 1988 and 1999  
 13:01 9 (sic) but then as you know there was a deposition  
 13:01 10 in 1990, trial testimony in 1991, and at that time  
 13:01 11 I would go back and review the notes and sometimes  
 13:01 12 on a second reading or third reading in  
 13:01 13 preparation for a deposition or for trial  
 13:01 14 testimony something would catch my eye for some  
 13:01 15 reason. The fact you find February, '91 I suspect  
 13:01 16 it has to do with the Kotler trial, I was  
 13:01 17 reviewing my copy, one of these things for the  
 13:01 18 Kotler trial and something caught my eye and I  
 13:01 19 just made a point that this caught my eye now as  
 13:02 20 opposed to when I did it before.  
 13:02 21 Q So the date is more of what caught my eye as  
 13:02 22 opposed to an additional section of notes written  
 13:02 23 on that date?  
 13:02 24 A That is correct. The basic notes that you see  
 13:02 25 were done in 1988 and 1989. But as I thumb

12:58 1 Q When did you put together this original document?  
 12:58 2 A All of this work was done in 1988 and 1989. I  
 12:58 3 might add, just for completeness, that serendipity  
 12:58 4 influences things. Why a person does what they  
 12:58 5 do, how they get involved. As I told you before,  
 12:58 6 I did not contact Arnold & Porter; they contacted  
 12:59 7 me. Part of the serendipity of my involvement is  
 12:59 8 that I was between projects. I just completed my  
 12:59 9 second book, Learning to Heal, the one that I had  
 12:59 10 received tenure and promotion to associate  
 12:59 11 professor for. I hadn't quite gotten into the new  
 12:59 12 book that became, the new project that became the  
 12:59 13 Time to Heal. So I had a window of opportunity to  
 12:59 14 do this study that I would not have had had Murray  
 12:59 15 Garnick called me a year earlier or a year later.  
 12:59 16 That's the serendipity. This entire study from  
 12:59 17 which my opinions today are based was done in  
 12:59 18 1988, 1989.  
 12:59 19 Q There are some notations that I can read because  
 12:59 20 I'm going to ask you about and if you can't read  
 12:59 21 them, please let me know. On that, for the  
 13:00 22 record, this set that I gave Dr. Ludmerer is Bates  
 13:00 23 numbered A as in apple, P as in Peter, 5 024 0566  
 13:00 24 to 0638. On that first page, 0566, I seems to me  
 13:00 25 that out in the left-hand margin near the top is

13:02 1 through this myself I see a number of February,  
 13:02 2 1991 and that had to do with my review of the  
 13:02 3 notes in preparation for the Kotler trial.  
 13:02 4 Q Would you tell me again what the notes generally  
 13:02 5 had to do with?  
 13:02 6 A Are you talking about the notes underneath the  
 13:02 7 article?  
 13:02 8 Q First of all there will always be an author's  
 13:02 9 name, I take it?  
 13:02 10 A That's correct.  
 13:02 11 Q And the name of an article?  
 13:02 12 A Correct. You will see, to the degree these poor  
 13:02 13 qualities let us see, there is a complete  
 13:02 14 citation, you have authors, you have titles of  
 13:03 15 article, primary lung cancer, 18 autopsy cases,  
 13:03 16 I'm reading from number 2, NEM, that's New  
 13:03 17 England Journal of Medicine, volume 203, pages 473  
 13:03 18 to 477, September 4, 1930.  
 13:03 19 Q 30 maybe?  
 13:03 20 A 30. Again I have something under it that is a  
 13:03 21 clinical review, it discusses some of the clinical  
 13:03 22 behavior. You will see the next point under it  
 13:03 23 etiology not discussed, which was an important  
 13:03 24 observation. And I did that at the time of  
 13:03 25 original reading for each of those. Two years

13:03 1 later, three years later with the Kotler trial I  
 13:03 2 went back and looked at some of this to refresh  
 13:03 3 myself then for whatever reason something caught  
 13:03 4 my mind in February of '91 and those are the  
 13:04 5 February, '91 marks that you see in the left.  
 13:04 6 **Q To the best of your memory do most of the notes**  
 13:04 7 **have to do with a summary of the article or what**  
 13:04 8 **you thought were the important points in the**  
 13:04 9 **article?**  
 13:04 10 A That is correct. That I can go even stronger and  
 13:04 11 say that they entirely have to do with the  
 13:04 12 summation of what was in the article and what was  
 13:04 13 it about, that type of thing, yes. Was it a  
 13:04 14 clinical study, was it a review, was it  
 13:04 15 controlled, was it not controlled, what did they  
 13:04 16 find, what did they conclude. But I would say  
 13:04 17 exclusively there is a summation of what the  
 13:04 18 article was about. If I can just add a general  
 13:05 19 historical point as you are thumbing through. I  
 13:05 20 looked at in each of these cases the entire  
 13:05 21 article as an entirety because accuracy, fairness  
 13:05 22 and comprehensiveness and not taking things out of  
 13:05 23 context are important. A person can be ambivalent  
 13:05 24 in an article on anything. You can take one  
 13:05 25 quotation, but if it is not put in context that

13:07 1 But beyond that, I'm really not able to say what I  
 13:07 2 was trying to do.  
 13:07 3 **Q But that table was written in February of '91**  
 13:07 4 **rather than as part of your original survey?**  
 13:07 5 A That is correct, because you see a date 2/16/01.  
 13:07 6 I was reviewing these meager copies that we had  
 13:07 7 and doing some type of thinking about the subject  
 13:07 8 in preparation for Kotler and that table had  
 13:07 9 something to do with that but I can't tell you  
 13:07 10 anything more at this time. That's about as far  
 13:07 11 as I can go.  
 13:07 12 **Q That's fine. I'm going to hand you what has been**  
 13:07 13 **marked as Deposition Exhibit Ludmerer 8. This is**  
 13:08 14 **another document that your attorneys sent us as**  
 13:08 15 **reference materials.**  
 13:08 16 A Correct.  
 13:08 17 **Q For the record, the Bates number is AP5 024 0639**  
 13:08 18 **to 0669. Can you identify what this document is?**  
 13:08 19 A Yes, I can.  
 13:08 20 **Q Would you please?**  
 13:08 21 A Yes. This was the bibliography to the original  
 13:08 22 report prepared and written and filed by Dr.  
 13:08 23 Jeffrey Harris in the original Cipollone case. He  
 13:08 24 wrote an expert report, this is a bibliography to  
 13:08 25 that report.

13:05 1 would suggest that the person has a certain view;  
 13:05 2 but you can take another quotation from the same  
 13:05 3 article and it would give a different  
 13:05 4 interpretation. I read the entire article and had  
 13:05 5 summations about the overall thrust as opposed to  
 13:05 6 what the non-trained individual, the individual  
 13:05 7 not trained in history would do. It is easy if  
 13:05 8 you are biased or if you are not trained in  
 13:05 9 history, you have to pick and choose selectively.  
 13:05 10 These comments referred to the entire article and  
 13:05 11 the entire articles were read.  
 13:05 12 **Q On the last page which is Bates numbered 0638, at**  
 13:06 13 **the bottom half of that page there is the date**  
 13:06 14 **again, 2/16/91, then it looks to me like a table.**  
 13:06 15 **Can you explain what that bottom half of that page**  
 13:06 16 **is, if you remember?**  
 13:06 17 A I'm going to try. I can't guarantee. A, this was  
 13:06 18 11 years ago, and B the copy is poor. I can only  
 13:06 19 speculate what I was doing there. I would rather  
 13:06 20 not. I'm sorry, I just don't remember that.  
 13:06 21 **Q That's fine.**  
 13:06 22 A Clearly I was putting something together in the  
 13:07 23 context of refreshing myself on the subject and  
 13:07 24 organizing my thoughts for the preparation for the  
 13:07 25 testimony I was going to give in the Kotler case.

13:08 1 **Q And were there articles in this bibliography that**  
 13:09 2 **you had not read for your original study?**  
 13:09 3 A I actually reviewed this prior to undertaking my  
 13:09 4 own original study, in terms of the sequence of  
 13:09 5 events. This is the first thing that I did.  
 13:09 6 **Q My fault for labeling them backwards.**  
 13:09 7 A That's hard to know, even for me it is hard to  
 13:09 8 know. The copies are so poor. This gets back to  
 13:09 9 the conversation we had before lunch. You asked  
 13:09 10 what I think is a very important question. I'm a  
 13:09 11 doctor, I believe that lung cancer -- I believe  
 13:09 12 that lung cancer is caused by cigarette smoking.  
 13:09 13 We have known it for close to four decades.  
 13:09 14 Cigarette smoking is a great public health menace.  
 13:09 15 I tell my patients not to smoke if they don't  
 13:09 16 smoke, I tell them to stop if they do, etc., etc.,  
 13:09 17 etc.. You asked how does that viewpoint lend  
 13:10 18 yourself to being a witness for the defense.  
 13:10 19 And it was really this document that led me  
 13:10 20 to realize that I'm an advocate for public health,  
 13:10 21 I'm also an advocate for the integrity of history  
 13:10 22 and not changing the facts of history to support  
 13:10 23 your political or social view of the present. So  
 13:10 24 I read the Harris report which looks like a very  
 13:10 25 proper, academic report, it is lengthy, it is well

*Possible to get the Harris affidavit  
from Cipollone?*

Page 114

13:10 1 typed, highly footnoted. But reading the text  
 13:10 2 itself from my general knowledge both as a  
 13:10 3 historian of medicine and as a physician, there  
 13:10 4 were many statements in there that were frankly  
 13:10 5 wrong, and many of them had footnotes. So I  
 13:10 6 compared his statements with the original sources,  
 13:11 7 and to my surprise and disappointment I found that  
 13:11 8 he had in many cases actually misrepresented the  
 13:11 9 articles here. He would claim in his report that  
 13:11 10 the article -- that the author had made a certain  
 13:11 11 statement. You read the article, that statement  
 13:11 12 had not been made. He fabricated it. He  
 13:11 13 committed fraud. It was distressing to me as I  
 13:11 14 described before.  
 13:11 15 And I was ready not to accept this assignment  
 13:11 16 until I read that report and wrestled with the  
 13:11 17 issue that I described to you before of boy, I  
 13:11 18 wish everyone in the world would stop smoking  
 13:11 19 tomorrow. On the other hand, I'm an advocate for  
 13:11 20 the integrity of history, not changing it. That's  
 13:11 21 when I consulted the Dean and my department  
 13:11 22 chairman, a few people like that and how I got  
 13:12 23 into the case. But historically it preceded my  
 13:12 24 own research. This was my careful, obviously  
 13:12 25 careful study of the Harris report because I not

Page 115

13:12 1 only looked at his quotations but compared his  
 13:12 2 quotations with the sources.  
 13:12 3 When I found he was misrepresenting them,  
 13:12 4 that was disturbing to me and that led to my  
 13:12 5 willingness to speak as an advocate of history in  
 13:12 6 these issues after consulting some of the  
 13:12 7 university leadership. This came first and then,  
 13:12 8 Deposition Exhibit 8 came first, that was part of  
 13:12 9 the history, the Harris report, that's when I said  
 13:12 10 to Murray Garnick, I will undertake the study.  
 13:12 11 First I did the secondary reading as we described,  
 13:12 12 then I entered my own primary reading which I did  
 13:12 13 in the systematic way that I described to you.  
 13:12 14 This was actually the first thing that I did.  
 13:12 15 Q Deposition Exhibit 8 in chronology comes before  
 13:13 16 Deposition Exhibit 7?  
 13:13 17 A That's correct.  
 13:13 18 Q There are lots of notes in the margins on  
 13:13 19 Deposition Exhibit number 8. Are those your notes  
 13:13 20 or are those someone else's notes?  
 13:13 21 A Those are mine.  
 13:13 22 Q And generally what were you commenting on in those  
 13:13 23 notes? Because again I cannot read most of this.  
 13:13 24 A I can't do much better than you can with many of  
 13:13 25 these. Again for the same reason, but in

Page 116

13:13 1 principal I can -- they there are two important  
 13:13 2 points. Number 1, I did the same thing in general  
 13:13 3 that I did subsequently where I would read an  
 13:13 4 article and I would have some sort of summation,  
 13:14 5 whether it was about what they did, how they came  
 13:14 6 down. In addition to that there were a number of  
 13:14 7 important examples where as I mentioned before I  
 13:14 8 found that Dr. Harris misrepresented what was in  
 13:14 9 these articles and there were comments to that  
 13:14 10 effect that he says that Dr. Smith said this when  
 13:14 11 in fact if you look at the article he took it out  
 13:14 12 of context where he says something else.  
 13:14 13 Q You made a comment to that effect?  
 13:14 14 A I made a comment to those effects on this  
 13:14 15 bibliography where that occurred. He has a lot of  
 13:14 16 sources here. It is not that every article is  
 13:14 17 misrepresented, it is that maybe six or eight or  
 13:14 18 10 key articles from that from the period are  
 13:14 19 misrepresented, and I made comments. But the copy  
 13:14 20 is so poor I can't -- I'm having the same  
 13:15 21 difficulty everyone else has, reading it. Maybe  
 13:15 22 Mark Edell will be kind enough to return the  
 13:15 23 originals so I will be able to read this better.  
 13:15 24 Q The next exhibit I'm going to pass you is Exhibit  
 13:15 25 number 9, Ludmerer 9, and again this --

Page 117

13:15 1 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Off the record for a  
 13:15 2 tapc change. The time is 1:11 PM.  
 13:15 3 (Short recess was taken.)  
 13:24 4 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Back on the record.  
 13:24 5 The time is 1:18 PM.  
 13:24 6 MR. WOODS: This is David Woods.  
 13:24 7 Because the Court has what I understand is a  
 13:24 8 pretty strict rule on what objections I can make  
 13:24 9 versus not make, I didn't want to say anything  
 13:24 10 earlier, but when Ms. Moltzen reserves her rights  
 13:24 11 to potentially reopen the deposition in the event  
 13:24 12 she is successful in extracting these long lost  
 13:24 13 notes from Mr. Edell, I didn't want my silence to  
 13:24 14 indicate acquiescence to her having any such  
 13:24 15 rights. In the event she actually is able to get  
 13:24 16 those original notes out of Mr. Edell, we can take  
 13:24 17 it from there. That's all I want to say.  
 13:24 18 Q I think we left off as I handed you Ludmerer  
 13:24 19 Deposition Exhibit 9, and again this was something  
 13:24 20 that I received from your attorneys as reference  
 13:24 21 materials. The Bates number is AP5 024 0997 to  
 13:24 22 1056. Again, they are very difficult to read but  
 13:24 23 I do believe that the title on them is Paradigm.  
 13:24 24 Could you tell me what this document is?  
 13:24 25 A You are correct, the title is Paradigm. This is a

Page 118

13:24 1 figurative chapter of the original project done  
13:24 2 toward the end of the project. Quite frankly, Ms.  
13:24 3 Moltzen, I don't remember if it was the last thing  
13:24 4 I did or one of the last things I did, but it does  
13:24 5 very much have to do with the issue of methods of  
13:24 6 history that we talked about before, doing it  
13:24 7 properly, bringing a context to what you are  
13:24 8 doing, the historical framework and understanding  
13:24 9 of how medicine and science evolved that a trained  
13:24 10 historian of medicine develops in the process of  
13:24 11 acquiring that training.  
13:24 12 Particularly when I got to the literature of  
13:24 13 the fifties and sixties, it occurred to me that  
13:24 14 much of the debate at that time had a Kuhnian  
13:25 15 explanation. By Kuhnian I'm referring to the  
13:25 16 greatest historian, philosopher of science, Thomas  
13:25 17 Kuhn, K-u-h-n, who wrote seminal works on paradigm  
13:25 18 shifts, scientific revolution, this sort of thing.  
13:25 19 When one world view replaces another. And it  
13:25 20 struck me that we were experiencing such a  
13:25 21 paradigm shift in the investigations of lung  
13:25 22 cancer in the fifties and sixties. The  
13:25 23 epidemiology, the old epidemiology was that of  
13:25 24 infectious diseases. We have a new discipline  
13:25 25 being created, epidemiology of chronic diseases

Page 119

13:25 1 with new canons of truth, new ways to show  
13:25 2 causality; instead of having to show specific  
13:25 3 causes, you are talking risk factors. Instead of  
13:25 4 having to have laboratory or experimental  
13:26 5 confirmation that something is a toxin, you can  
13:26 6 arrive at such conclusions indirectly through  
13:26 7 epidemiological studies if certain criteria are  
13:26 8 met. It was one world view emerging and  
13:26 9 challenging the traditional view that you have to  
13:26 10 demonstrate it in the laboratory, that there are  
13:26 11 specific causes of disease, etc.  
13:26 12 So to understand that point better, I did  
13:26 13 some work in the area of scientific revolutions,  
13:26 14 paradigm shifts, and that is the theme of Exhibit  
13:26 15 9, and indeed that's what I maintain today. The  
13:26 16 debate at that time had much to do with the  
13:26 17 creation of a new field, new canons of proof, no  
13:26 18 definitions of causality, new definitions of risk,  
13:26 19 a newer view had to replace a traditional world  
13:26 20 view. This literally helped me understand that  
13:27 21 phenomena.  
13:27 22 **Q Was this set up along the same lines as Exhibits**  
13:27 23 **Number 7 and 8 where you read the literature, and**  
13:27 24 **then for each one that you list here you will have**  
13:27 25 **the name of the article or the book and the author**

Page 120

13:27 1 and then you will have some comments summarizing  
13:27 2 what it says. Or is this done in a different  
13:27 3 method?  
13:27 4 A I would say this is actually an amalgam. I  
13:27 5 generated a bibliography called Paradigm, or  
13:27 6 something to that effect, which is a bibliography  
13:27 7 of secondary sources, and its analogies with the  
13:27 8 earlier bibliography --  
13:28 9 **Q I don't mean to interrupt. This may help. I'm**  
13:28 10 **going to hand you what has been labeled as**  
13:28 11 **Ludmerer Deposition Exhibit 10 and it is called**  
13:28 12 **Paradigm. It looks like a bibliography. I**  
13:28 13 **apologize if that was not a helpful interruption.**  
13:28 14 A Actually it was a helpful interruption. I  
13:28 15 appreciate you doing that. This is a study of  
13:28 16 secondary literature. I would make the same  
13:28 17 comments about it that I did about the earlier  
13:28 18 secondary bibliography. I think this is very  
13:28 19 thorough, I think it is very comprehensive and  
13:28 20 representative on literature dealing with this  
13:28 21 issue of paradigm as it existed in April of 1989  
13:28 22 when I did this. I do not claim this to be  
13:29 23 exhaustive and completely inclusive as I would  
13:29 24 claim for my primary search when I went to the  
13:29 25 Index Medicus. This is pretty good. And as a

Page 121

13:29 1 historian of medicine who keeps up with the field,  
13:29 2 you know what some of the important sources are to  
13:29 3 begin with, you pick up sources, you see what  
13:29 4 their bibliographies are, literature searches, you  
13:29 5 talk with friends, and you put together a  
13:29 6 representative bibliography. And that is Exhibit  
13:29 7 10. In Exhibit 9 I did not approach it in the  
13:29 8 same fashion that I did the original sources.  
13:29 9 **Q Exhibit 7?**  
13:29 10 A Exhibit 7, to use that as an example. Exhibit 7 I  
13:29 11 look at every article and commented on them. On  
13:29 12 Exhibit 10 I looked at everything here. On the  
13:30 13 other hand, not surprisingly, some of the books or  
13:30 14 articles proved to be more useful than others.  
13:30 15 Some of them stimulated ideas and syntheses and  
13:30 16 interpretations in my mind, and that's really what  
13:30 17 this is. When I would read something from  
13:30 18 Lilianfeld or from whoever it may be, that would  
13:30 19 stimulate an idea or teach me something or help me  
13:30 20 understand something, I kept these notes of it.  
13:30 21 But it is not a systematic or comprehensive  
13:30 22 discussion of what Reference Number 1 said, what  
13:30 23 Reference Number 2 said. This was a -- more  
13:30 24 accurately can be described as a working document  
13:30 25 that helped me understand the subject.

Page 122

13:30 1 Q As a document, though, you did consider this and  
 13:30 2 use this in coming up with your initial  
 13:30 3 conclusions?  
 13:31 4 A That is correct. But, as I say, in distinction to  
 13:31 5 the primary sources with Exhibit 7 being an  
 13:31 6 example where after looking at each article and  
 13:31 7 making comments on each article, I did not  
 13:31 8 necessarily write down comments of everything on  
 13:31 9 this bibliography. If something was helpful or  
 13:31 10 taught me something or helped pull something  
 13:31 11 together, I would. But there were other things  
 13:31 12 that I didn't learn anything that I didn't already  
 13:31 13 know or weren't as helpful as I hoped it might be,  
 13:31 14 and I didn't feel the need to write this specific  
 13:31 15 comment on here. By "here" I mean Exhibit 9.  
 13:31 16 Q How did you go about selecting these 56 items?  
 13:31 17 A Well, as I mentioned before, there is an art as  
 13:31 18 well as a science, but by staying up with the  
 13:31 19 literature, by having been a professionally  
 13:32 20 trained historian of medicine, I knew Thomas Kuhn  
 13:32 21 and some of the articles or books on this theme of  
 13:32 22 scientific revolution, paradigm shift, that sort  
 13:32 23 of thing. I did a bibliography search and I  
 13:32 24 learned of other articles, more recent articles  
 13:32 25 that were interpreting those decades in exactly

Page 123

13:32 1 the same fashion. Susser, for example, Number 52,  
 13:32 2 Epidemiology in the United States after World War  
 13:32 3 II. The evolution of technique. Terrorists.  
 13:32 4 Number 53 what he is calling the second  
 13:32 5 epidemiological revolution. So I did a literature  
 13:32 6 search, there was already an emerging literature  
 13:32 7 developing at this point that a scientific  
 13:32 8 revolution or paradigm shift was in fact  
 13:32 9 occurring.  
 13:33 10 Other literature searches helped, sometimes  
 13:33 11 references for -- you would read something and  
 13:33 12 there would be references to something in a  
 13:33 13 bibliography or citations and you would pick that  
 13:33 14 up. Consult historical colleagues, "Anything on  
 13:33 15 the paradigm issue or scientific revolution that I  
 13:33 16 should know of that I haven't?" It is an art.  
 13:33 17 Q I can see where most of these fit into the  
 13:33 18 definition of secondary sources that you were  
 13:33 19 talking about. I do have -- would you look at  
 13:33 20 Number 9, please, Jerome Cornfield. He is writing  
 13:33 21 in 1951 and he is applying it to cancer of the  
 13:33 22 lung, breast and cervix.  
 13:33 23 MR. WOODS: Objection.  
 13:33 24 Q Isn't that a primary source?  
 13:34 25 A I would say that is a correct characterization.

Page 124

13:34 1 Actually, as I look at this, there are -- this  
 13:34 2 list includes primary and secondary sources,  
 13:34 3 because what I would find is that some of the  
 13:34 4 articles that I would be finding on my own  
 13:34 5 themselves would talk about this conflict in world  
 13:34 6 view. Traditionally medical science demanded  
 13:34 7 experimental view, but we knew epidemiologists  
 13:34 8 feel there are other ways to do this. Some of the  
 13:34 9 sources from the fifties and sixties contributed  
 13:34 10 to this view of a paradigm shift. That's what got  
 13:35 11 me thinking of it in the first place when I read  
 13:35 12 some of the articles from the fifties and sixties  
 13:35 13 and they would use words such as paradigm shift,  
 13:35 14 new ways of proof. Some of the challenges and  
 13:35 15 discussions that were going on at the time about  
 13:35 16 how does one really demonstrate a cause, what type  
 13:35 17 of criteria do you need? So I appreciate your  
 13:35 18 making that point. I think that it would be more  
 13:35 19 accurate to characterize this bibliography as  
 13:35 20 consisting of both primary and secondary sources.  
 13:35 21 Q And also to characterize this bibliography as not  
 13:35 22 being exhaustive?  
 13:35 23 A I would not claim that it is exhaustive. I would  
 13:35 24 claim that it is sufficient, but I would not claim  
 13:35 25 it is exhaustive, that every article or book on

Page 125

13:35 1 the subject of paradigm or scientific revolution  
 13:35 2 is there. I would claim that it is sufficient and  
 13:35 3 thorough and comprehensive.  
 13:35 4 Q Sufficient for what purpose?  
 13:35 5 A Sufficient for the purpose of developing and being  
 13:35 6 able to defend the viewpoint that a revolution was  
 13:35 7 going on within epidemiology itself, what Susser  
 13:35 8 called the epidemiological revolution, new  
 13:35 9 standards of causation, new ways of demonstrating  
 13:36 10 proof. Basically to understand the evolution of  
 13:36 11 the epidemiology of chronic diseases as a new  
 13:36 12 discipline, how that grew, how that became  
 13:36 13 institutionalized, sufficient to tell a  
 13:36 14 responsible story.  
 13:36 15 Q What is the time period of that second  
 13:36 16 epidemiological revolution?  
 13:36 17 A Basically at the threat of the tobacco  
 13:36 18 controversy. Largely out of the tobacco  
 13:36 19 controversy, to a secondary degree out of the  
 13:36 20 Framingham study. It was largely embedded in the  
 13:36 21 tobacco controversy. So the time period would be  
 13:36 22 roughly 1950 to the mid sixties.  
 13:36 23 Q I'm going to hand you what has been labeled as  
 13:36 24 Ludmerer Deposition Exhibit Number 11. Can you  
 13:36 25 identify that document for me?

Page 126

13:37 1 A Yes.  
13:37 2 Q What is it?  
13:37 3 A Item 11 is entitled Supplemental Bibliography.  
13:37 4 Q While you are looking that over, for the record I  
13:37 5 will say that the Bates number on this is AP5 024  
13:37 6 1062. The second page is 1063. The third and  
13:37 7 last page cannot be read. I'm sorry, go ahead.  
13:37 8 A I do not remember precisely at what point this was  
13:37 9 put together. If I were to hazard a guess --  
13:37 10 Q Did you put it together?  
13:37 11 A Yes, I did. It would have been at one of two  
13:38 12 points. I think it is most likely that this was  
13:38 13 put together in late 1990 or early 1991, in  
13:38 14 preparation for my first trial appearance at the  
13:38 15 Kotler case. I did my work, as I mentioned to you  
13:38 16 before, in '88 and '89, but now a couple of years  
13:39 17 later there is a trial, you find a few new things,  
13:39 18 you find you forgot to put a few things in. A  
13:39 19 supplementary bibliography was put together for  
13:39 20 the sake of thoroughness and complete revelation  
13:39 21 to the opposing side of everything that I had  
13:39 22 consulted. I believe it was done at that time.  
13:39 23 Q To put these in a chronological order then,  
13:39 24 Deposition Exhibit 8 comes first, that's the  
13:39 25 Harris bibliography?

Page 127

13:39 1 A That's correct.  
13:39 2 Q Then Deposition Exhibit Number 7, which is the  
13:39 3 1930 to 1950 portion of your materials, in time  
13:39 4 comes next, is that correct?  
13:39 5 A Actually, that is not correct. There would be the  
13:39 6 original bibliography of secondary sources that  
13:39 7 would come next. This is a generalization that I  
13:39 8 did, most of my work on what historians call  
13:39 9 context first, then I jumped into the primary  
13:39 10 sources. That would have been second, then this  
13:39 11 would have been afterwards.  
13:39 12 Q Does the Paradigm then, Exhibit 9, come before the  
13:40 13 exhibit we are working on now, Exhibit 11, the  
13:40 14 supplementary bibliography that you think might  
13:40 15 have been written in '91?  
13:40 16 A I'm sorry, I didn't hear that question. Could you  
13:40 17 repeat it please?  
13:40 18 Q The paradigm work, does that come before the  
13:40 19 supplemental?  
13:40 20 A Yes. Paradigm was part of what I call the  
13:40 21 original crutch, I think in '88, 1989. That, the  
13:40 22 supplemental bibliography, was the additional  
13:40 23 sources put together I believe before the Kotler  
13:40 24 trial that either I discovered in preparation for  
13:40 25 that or that just for some reason didn't get

Page 128

13:40 1 included in one of the earlier bibliographies. By  
13:40 2 the way, between here and there, there is a  
13:41 3 similar bibliography, 1950 to '59, 1960 to '64  
13:41 4 which is 1988, '89.  
13:41 5 Q And this Exhibit Number 11, I take it that again  
13:41 6 it is a mixture of primary and secondary, is that  
13:41 7 correct?  
13:41 8 A I can't see it. May I see it, please? That is  
13:41 9 correct.  
13:41 10 Q I'm handing you what has been marked as Ludmerer  
13:41 11 Deposition Exhibit 12. Can you identify that?  
13:41 12 A Exhibit 12 is entitled Additional Bibliography,  
13:41 13 and there are 24 items on it. Most of the sources  
13:42 14 as I look through quickly are secondary sources,  
13:42 15 but actually it is a mixture of primary and  
13:42 16 secondary sources. Actually, as I look through it  
13:42 17 probably it is a mixture, a combination of  
13:42 18 secondary and primary sources. This was put  
13:42 19 together for completeness sake in this more recent  
13:42 20 year of my involvement. My opinions basically  
13:42 21 come from the '98, '99 study.  
13:43 22 Q You mean '88, '89?  
13:43 23 A Yes, '88. What did I say?  
13:43 24 Q I think you said '98, '99.  
13:43 25 A '88, '89. As I think I mentioned, six years went

Page 129

13:43 1 by with no contact at all, then the last four or  
13:43 2 five years there has been a flurry of cases and  
13:43 3 occasional deposition or trial that I have been  
13:43 4 involved with. This is just a supplemental  
13:43 5 bibliography of things that I encountered in that  
13:43 6 more recent preparation for completeness or may  
13:43 7 have forgotten to put on one of the earlier  
13:43 8 bibliographies. The objective was complete  
13:43 9 disclosure to the plaintiff of everything that I  
13:43 10 have seen. I haven't gone through and checked. I  
13:43 11 would suspect that some of the things here are in  
13:43 12 those earlier bibliographies. But just to be sure  
13:43 13 everything was listed we put together a  
13:43 14 supplemental bibliography, we called it Additional  
13:43 15 Bibliography, November 2001, so you would have a  
13:43 16 record of everything that I have consulted.  
13:44 17 (Deposition Exhibit No. 13 was marked  
13:44 18 for identification.)  
13:44 19 Q I'm going to hand you what has been marked as  
13:44 20 Ludmerer Deposition Exhibit 13 and it is part one  
13:44 21 of the 1964 report of the advisory committee to  
13:44 22 the Surgeon General of the Public Health Service  
13:44 23 entitled Smoking and Health. On Page 19, heading  
13:44 24 Chapter 3, this particular chapter is called  
13:45 25 Criteria for Judgment. "In making

Page 130

13:45 1 critical appraisals of data and interpretations  
 13:45 2 and in formulating" --  
 13:45 3 A What line are you on?  
 13:45 4 Q The very top. "In making critical appraisals of  
 13:45 5 data and interpretations and in formulating its  
 13:45 6 own conclusions, the Surgeon General's advisory  
 13:45 7 committee on smoking and health, ..., made  
 13:45 8 decisions or judgments at three levels." And it  
 13:45 9 looks like they look at the validity of a  
 13:45 10 publication or report and the elements they used  
 13:45 11 for the competence of the training of the  
 13:45 12 investigator, degree of freedom from bias, design  
 13:45 13 and scope of the investigation, adequacy of  
 13:45 14 facilities and resources, and adequacy of  
 13:45 15 controls. Did you make any value judgments when  
 13:45 16 you were reading and reviewing the various  
 13:46 17 studies?  
 13:46 18 MR. WOODS: Objection.  
 13:46 19 A I don't know that I formally went through in a  
 13:46 20 systematic way and gave each paper a numerical  
 13:46 21 score or that sort of thing. On the other hand, I  
 13:46 22 do think it is important to point out that part of  
 13:46 23 reading the literature is to read it critically.  
 13:46 24 In that sense I did. I did take into account not  
 13:46 25 only who wrote things, the Nobel laureate said

Page 131

13:46 1 something, the leader in the field, you take that,  
 13:46 2 one tends to take that more seriously than if a  
 13:47 3 post-doc in an unimportant lab said something.  
 13:47 4 The emphasis is part of critical review of  
 13:47 5 everything. But I did notice the type of study  
 13:47 6 that it was. Was there data or was it  
 13:47 7 speculation? Was it a controlled study or an  
 13:47 8 uncontrolled study? Is this a formal  
 13:47 9 epidemiological, well-controlled, retrospective  
 13:47 10 study with good controls, such as we saw after  
 13:47 11 1950, or is this an uncontrolled study. I got 100  
 13:47 12 patients, 80 of them, 80 percent smoke, maybe  
 13:47 13 smoking is the cause.  
 13:47 14 I would distinguish between that and a letter  
 13:47 15 to the editor where someone would say I have no  
 13:47 16 data, but maybe this is going on or maybe that is  
 13:47 17 going on. So I do think it would be fair to say  
 13:48 18 that in the formation of my opinions I looked not  
 13:48 19 only at what was said but who said it, how it said  
 13:48 20 it, what was the evidence to substantiate that,  
 13:48 21 how did other people react to it and so forth,  
 13:48 22 yes.  
 13:48 23 Q Did source of funding go into your judgment?  
 13:48 24 A Not at all.  
 13:48 25 Q Why not?

Page 132

13:48 1 A In science what matters is ideas and proof and  
 13:48 2 argument, and not who happened to fund it, not  
 13:48 3 whether it is National Institute of Health or  
 13:48 4 whether it is Memorial Sloan-Kettering or a  
 13:48 5 private foundation or whatever. It is the ideas  
 13:48 6 that count. Many projects also -- again, I'm glad  
 13:48 7 you asked that question because it illustrates  
 13:48 8 some of the complexities of the history and the  
 13:48 9 untidiness of history. This whole issue of  
 13:48 10 funding also depends on chronology. If you are  
 13:49 11 looking before World War II, there was very little  
 13:49 12 funding of any sort, and people often did studies  
 13:49 13 on their own, they did work at night and they  
 13:49 14 would go back to the hospital and do retrospective  
 13:49 15 reviews, they would have small grants. This era  
 13:49 16 of larger funding is really post World War II  
 13:49 17 phenomena.  
 13:49 18 The issue of funding becomes additionally  
 13:49 19 complex in that you find many studies that have  
 13:49 20 multiple sources of funding, private and public.  
 13:49 21 But basically ideas count and I did not do -- not  
 13:49 22 sources of money. Science is a marketplace of  
 13:49 23 ideas, you have to be able to demonstrate and  
 13:49 24 prove and persuade others and ultimately over the  
 13:49 25 long run that is what is important, not who your

Page 133

13:49 1 funder happened to be.  
 13:49 2 Q Do you believe the source of funding can ever  
 13:49 3 influence scientific independence?  
 13:50 4 A You know, I don't know. It wouldn't surprise me  
 13:50 5 if you can find an occasional instance when that  
 13:50 6 happened. I would submit that that would be an  
 13:50 7 aberration. Because one of the last things  
 13:50 8 scientists wants to do is to be exposed as a  
 13:50 9 fraud. It would destroy a scientist's reputation  
 13:50 10 if it could be shown that funding sources  
 13:50 11 influenced one's viewpoint. Now we are all  
 13:50 12 biased, all of us have our biases and prejudices.  
 13:50 13 But I'm talking about fabrication, changing data,  
 13:50 14 changing meaning, this sort of thing that goes  
 13:50 15 beyond the bias that each one of us carries in our  
 13:50 16 day-to-day world. The scientist who can be shown  
 13:50 17 to be unfair, dishonest, is a person who has lost  
 13:51 18 a career. We have aberrations in the history of  
 13:51 19 science where that has happened, but those are  
 13:51 20 considered aberrations.  
 13:51 21 Q Do you remember if any of the primary literature  
 13:51 22 that you reviewed was published as a result of  
 13:51 23 tobacco industry funded projects?  
 13:51 24 A Yes, I do. Now I do want to underscore, as I did  
 13:51 25 before, that I did not do a systematic review of

13:51 1 funding sources in my study of the papers. I  
 13:51 2 looked carefully at the papers and what they said  
 13:51 3 and what the type of paper was, is this a clinical  
 13:51 4 study, a pathological study, epidemiological  
 13:51 5 study, experimental study of some sort, was it  
 13:51 6 controlled, does the data seem to be or are the  
 13:51 7 conclusions validated. All of those sorts of  
 13:51 8 things I looked at. It is very common, as I said  
 13:52 9 before, for investigators, particularly after  
 13:52 10 1950, to have multiple sources of funding because  
 13:52 11 that's when the private foundations like American  
 13:52 12 Cancer, American Heart are as starting to grow,  
 13:52 13 that's when the National Institutes of Health is  
 13:52 14 also taking off.  
 13:52 15 And I also noticed that some of the papers  
 13:52 16 were funded by the tobacco industry, either I  
 13:52 17 think it is the TIRC or individual companies, and  
 13:52 18 I can recall - I didn't systematically study it,  
 13:52 19 but there were papers that had conclusions that  
 13:52 20 were critical of the tobacco industry that were  
 13:52 21 supported by either TIRC money or supported by one  
 13:52 22 of the companies.  
 13:52 23 For example, one of the confirmations that  
 13:52 24 the carcinogenic agent, benzoapyrene, exists in  
 13:52 25 cigarette smoke, which was published was done by a

13:54 1 the evidence. Less the observations themselves,  
 13:54 2 more the interpretations and what conclusions can  
 13:54 3 be drawn from epidemiological data in the absence  
 13:54 4 of the traditional experimental laboratory type of  
 13:54 5 confirmation that medical science at that time was  
 13:54 6 accustomed to. So there were plenty of those in  
 13:54 7 the fifties and sixties. They decreased with time  
 13:55 8 because you have a building consensus, a growing  
 13:55 9 consensus. In the 1950's a heck of a lot of  
 13:55 10 skepticism about the idea that lung cancer might  
 13:55 11 be caused by cigarette smoking, then you start  
 13:55 12 seeing the building of the consensus in the early  
 13:55 13 pronouncements by public health agencies and you  
 13:55 14 start to witness a turn in sentiment within the  
 13:55 15 scientific community and it grows year by year.  
 13:55 16 I like to use the term a growing consensus,  
 13:55 17 an emerging consensus. On the other hand you  
 13:55 18 continued to see skepticism toward that view by  
 13:55 19 responsible scientists through the early sixties,  
 13:55 20 through the Surgeon General's report. To my  
 13:55 21 knowledge in the great majority of these cases,  
 13:55 22 these were independent scientists. These were not  
 13:55 23 tobacco company scientists. They tended to be  
 13:55 24 laboratory workers, Memorial Sloan-Kettering,  
 13:56 25 Yale, National Institutes of Health, many of them

13:53 1 scientist working at, I believe the American  
 13:53 2 Tobacco Company. One of the published  
 13:53 3 confirmations of the skin painting experiments was  
 13:53 4 published I remember by Dr. Bock who was employed  
 13:53 5 by one of the tobacco companies. I observed this  
 13:53 6 anecdotally. I didn't systematically see it. I  
 13:53 7 don't have a graph that I can give you. I did see  
 13:53 8 studies that had observations or conclusions that  
 13:53 9 helped build the case against cigarette smoking  
 13:53 10 that in some way were funded by either a tobacco  
 13:53 11 company or the TIRC. Most of the papers, of  
 13:53 12 course, had other sources of funding. American  
 13:53 13 Heart, American Lung, National Institutes of  
 13:53 14 Health, so forth, that's where the majority of it  
 13:53 15 came from.  
 13:53 16 Q You said you remember some TIRC and industry  
 13:53 17 funded projects that where the result was against  
 13:54 18 smoking or that came out saying that smoking did  
 13:54 19 cause cancer. Do you remember if there were any  
 13:54 20 studies that came out promoting the idea that it  
 13:54 21 was still an open question?  
 13:54 22 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 13:54 23 A Well there were a number of studies and a number  
 13:54 24 of papers and essays and articles in the fifties  
 13:54 25 and sixties that did express their skepticism of

13:56 1 were statisticians. These were the types of  
 13:56 2 individuals who in the fifties and sixties were  
 13:56 3 still expressing their reservations about the  
 13:56 4 hypothesis; not about the data, but about the  
 13:56 5 meaning or interpretations that could be concluded  
 13:56 6 from it.  
 13:56 7 Q I want to clarify my question and your answer. My  
 13:56 8 question was, did you see articles funded by the  
 13:56 9 tobacco industry that discussed -- that supported  
 13:56 10 the open controversy? And you said there were  
 13:56 11 plenty of articles like that. But I had limited  
 13:56 12 it to tobacco industry articles. Were you  
 13:56 13 limiting it to it in your answer also?  
 13:56 14 A No. Again I have not at any point studied ideas  
 13:56 15 in relation to funding sources. And as I said  
 13:56 16 before, in science what matters is idea and proof  
 13:57 17 and evidence and persuasion ultimately and not who  
 13:57 18 the funder happens to be.  
 13:57 19 If one is looking at those who expressed  
 13:57 20 their doubts about being able to draw causal  
 13:57 21 conclusions from existing evidence in the fifties  
 13:57 22 and sixties, the great majority of those people to  
 13:57 23 my knowledge had no relationship to the tobacco  
 13:57 24 industry. I'm making that point. These are  
 13:57 25 people, as I said they tended to be people of the

Page 138

13:57 1 traditional paradigm that you needed to have  
 13:57 2 laboratory confirmation or experimental  
 13:57 3 conversation. They were laboratory workers, not  
 13:57 4 epidemiologists. They were suspicious,  
 13:57 5 intellectually what does this mean. It doesn't  
 13:57 6 meet the traditional standards. And the ones who  
 13:57 7 immediately come to mind were funded by major  
 13:58 8 private cancer institutions such as Memorial  
 13:58 9 Sloan-Kettering, they were medical schools such as  
 13:58 10 Yale, many of them with the National Cancer  
 13:58 11 Institute. They were the laboratory workers and  
 13:58 12 they were government funded.  
 13:58 13 **Q Was all of the primary literature that you**  
 13:58 14 **reviewed published in peer reviewed journals?**  
 13:58 15 **A** I believe that is a requirement to be listed in  
 13:58 16 Index Medicus so I believe the answer to that is  
 13:58 17 yes. There is something in medicine that we call  
 13:58 18 throw-aways, things are published in them, you get  
 13:58 19 it because you are a doctor, and there is stuff in  
 13:58 20 it. Everything I reviewed is from the Index  
 13:58 21 Medicus; and if not 100 percent peer reviewed, it  
 13:58 22 was 99.9 percent peer reviewed.  
 13:58 23 **Q I was originally going to ask you if all of the**  
 13:58 24 **primary literature you reviewed was on the subject**  
 13:59 25 **of smoking and health but now that you have**

Page 139

13:59 1 explained the paradigm to me I already know the  
 13:59 2 answer to that. Is it not true that all of the  
 13:59 3 primary literature that you reviewed for your  
 13:59 4 study was not on the subject of smoking and  
 13:59 5 health?  
 13:59 6 **A** It really relates to smoking and disease because  
 13:59 7 these are original studies that were helped  
 13:59 8 building a new field, the field of epidemiology of  
 13:59 9 chronic diseases. That was central to solving the  
 13:59 10 lung cancer questions. So I would say it does  
 13:59 11 relate to the issue of smoking and health.  
 13:59 12 **Q But all of those articles do not discuss smoking**  
 13:59 13 **and health, is that correct?**  
 13:59 14 **A** Which articles are you referring to?  
 13:59 15 **Q In the work you did entitled Paradigm?**  
 13:59 16 **A** Do have you that Paradigm bibliography? That  
 13:59 17 would help me more. I believe it is correct to  
 14:00 18 say that some of the literature that I consulted  
 14:00 19 in this issue of understanding the second  
 14:00 20 epidemiological revolution is a more general  
 14:00 21 secondary literature to help me understand  
 14:00 22 scientific revolutions and paradigm that help me  
 14:00 23 understand the events of smoking and health but  
 14:00 24 don't necessarily discuss smoking and health per  
 14:00 25 se. For example, I list Thomas Kuhn in his

Page 140

14:00 1 classic book, the Structure of Scientific  
 14:00 2 Revolutions. If a person is going to talk about  
 14:01 3 scientific revolutions, if a person is going to  
 14:01 4 talk about paradigm changes, if a person is going  
 14:01 5 to talk about the establishment of a new field or  
 14:01 6 new ways of demonstrating causation, you got to  
 14:01 7 understand Thomas Kuhn and his work in scientific  
 14:01 8 revolutions. But the issue of cigarette smoking  
 14:01 9 and public health is not something that Kuhn  
 14:01 10 discusses in the book. So both types of items are  
 14:01 11 on this bibliography. Some items specifically  
 14:01 12 come out of the smoking health controversy. When  
 14:01 13 you see participants in the study talking of these  
 14:01 14 terms, we got a new paradigm, we got to persuade  
 14:01 15 others about it. That comes from the primary  
 14:01 16 literature. But if you were reading Thomas Kuhn,  
 14:01 17 if you are reading the literature on scientific  
 14:01 18 revolutions itself, that is necessary in my  
 14:01 19 opinion to understanding the paradigm shift that  
 14:02 20 was occurring. But you are correct it doesn't  
 14:02 21 necessarily talk about tobacco or lung cancer per  
 14:02 22 se. It gets back to principles of history,  
 14:02 23 putting things in context, understanding the  
 14:02 24 context of the events more fully that you are  
 14:02 25 studying. So both types of things are here.

Page 141

14:02 1 **Q I asked you this for the secondary literature, now**  
 14:02 2 **I'm going to ask it for the primary literature.**  
 14:02 3 **Did you review any internal tobacco industry**  
 14:02 4 **documents in your review of the primary**  
 14:02 5 **literature?**  
 14:02 6 **A** No, I didn't. And this has to do with issues of  
 14:02 7 setting boundaries. Now that you mention this,  
 14:02 8 this is something that I would also like to be an  
 14:02 9 addendum to my response to your earlier question  
 14:02 10 of how historians do work. One of the things you  
 14:02 11 have to do is be able to put boundaries around a  
 14:02 12 project, where you begin at a point, where you end  
 14:03 13 at a point, why something is included, why  
 14:03 14 something might not be included, otherwise you are  
 14:03 15 doing research for life and not writing anything.  
 14:03 16 The study I did is, one chapter of it  
 14:03 17 obviously is a very complex case and complex  
 14:03 18 series of events. I studied things as a historian  
 14:03 19 of medicine, the evolution or scientific  
 14:03 20 understanding of the causes of lung cancer that  
 14:03 21 culminated with the consensus that grew in '64  
 14:03 22 with the Surgeon General's report, the last step  
 14:03 23 of the process.  
 14:03 24 I did not go into other areas, company  
 14:03 25 behavior, company signs, what companies knew, what

14:03 1 they didn't know, how they acted. It was not  
 14:03 2 necessary for what I did. I have not reviewed  
 14:03 3 company documents. In the same way I haven't  
 14:03 4 studied public opinion or public perceptions.  
 14:03 5 That was not part of the project that I did.  
 14:04 6 **Q Did you believe that the internal documents of the**  
 14:04 7 **industry were not important to the context?**  
 14:04 8 **A** I think that for the project that I did, the state  
 14:04 9 of scientific knowledge of the causes of lung  
 14:04 10 cancer and how we investigated that and how we  
 14:04 11 came to conclusions that we did, I maintain that  
 14:04 12 the acceptable currency is the published  
 14:04 13 scientific literature. This is pretty standard in  
 14:04 14 the history of medicine. Insofar as company  
 14:04 15 scientists may have published, and that was part  
 14:04 16 of what I looked at as I indicated to you before,  
 14:04 17 on the other hand reviewing company attitudes,  
 14:04 18 company responses, company behaviors, I understand  
 14:05 19 the relevance of those issues to these cases but I  
 14:05 20 do not feel that they were pertinent to the role  
 14:05 21 that I played in this. I have not done that.  
 14:05 22 **Q Did you review the articles in a publication put**  
 14:05 23 **out quarterly by the Tobacco Institute called**  
 14:05 24 **Tobacco and Health?**  
 14:05 25 **A** No, I did not.

14:07 1 **funding by TIRC?**  
 14:07 2 **A** That is correct. I cannot tell you exactly. But  
 14:07 3 I can't say that about any funding source. I mean  
 14:07 4 as we sit here today ideas, as I said before, what  
 14:07 5 matters in science ultimately is the quality of  
 14:07 6 ideas and evidence and not the funding sources. I  
 14:07 7 cannot tell you how many of the articles were  
 14:07 8 supported by the National Cancer Institute, how  
 14:07 9 many by the National Institutes of Health, how  
 14:07 10 many by the Public Health Service, how many by the  
 14:07 11 American Cancer Society, how many by the American  
 14:07 12 Heart Association, how many by local foundations,  
 14:07 13 how many by an individual tobacco company, how  
 14:07 14 many by the TIRC. I am unable to speak to that.  
 14:07 15 I can say just impressionistically that the  
 14:08 16 majority of published sources were published from  
 14:08 17 funds that did not involve TIRC or tobacco money  
 14:08 18 or tobacco interest. I can also tell you  
 14:08 19 anecdotally that I would occasionally encounter a  
 14:08 20 published study that had been funded by the TIRC.  
 14:08 21 I can't tell you how many that that would happen.  
 14:08 22 Some of them had conclusions that were actually on  
 14:08 23 the side that cigarette smoking is dangerous.  
 14:08 24 There were those.  
 14:08 25 In my opinion the two most important that I

14:05 1 **Q Are you familiar with the term TIRC?**  
 14:05 2 **A** I have heard the term. I don't know much about  
 14:05 3 it.  
 14:05 4 **Q What do you know about it?**  
 14:05 5 **A** I know that the mounting scientific information,  
 14:05 6 building a case that cigarette smoking might be  
 14:06 7 the cause of lung cancer, I say "might be" because  
 14:06 8 we are talking '53, but the tobacco industry  
 14:06 9 concerned about this issue, it is my understanding  
 14:06 10 that in response they formed an organization  
 14:06 11 called the TIRC. I always forget what those  
 14:06 12 initials stand for, Tobacco Institute Research  
 14:06 13 Council or something. I don't know to what degree  
 14:06 14 they were involved with supporting research. I  
 14:06 15 know that there was an industry organization that  
 14:06 16 funded certain research. I don't remember to what  
 14:06 17 -- I don't know to what degree TIRC was a  
 14:06 18 supportive research, to what degree it was part of  
 14:06 19 the public relations campaign that you were  
 14:06 20 alluding to before with some of the documents, or  
 14:06 21 it did both. I really don't know much about it.  
 14:06 22 I have not studied it, I have no intention to  
 14:06 23 study it. It is again out of my area.  
 14:06 24 **Q Then you cannot tell me how many of the articles**  
 14:06 25 **that you reviewed were published as a result of**

14:08 1 remember as we sit here today were the Bock  
 14:08 2 article which was a confirmation of skin painting  
 14:08 3 and one of the confirmations that benzoapyrene  
 14:08 4 exists in cigarette smoke.  
 14:08 5 **Q As I understand the manner in which you reached**  
 14:08 6 **your conclusions, you selected primary and**  
 14:09 7 **secondary sources, and then read those sources and**  
 14:09 8 **made notes about those sources. What else, what**  
 14:09 9 **other techniques did you use in your analysis when**  
 14:09 10 **you got to that point, the notes?**  
 14:09 11 **A** Well historians are limited by available evidence.  
 14:09 12 When you get beyond primary sources and get beyond  
 14:09 13 secondary sources there really isn't much else for  
 14:09 14 a historian to look at. I think I was complete  
 14:09 15 and comprehensive in looking at pertinent sources  
 14:09 16 that addressed this. I think what is especially  
 14:09 17 important was my review of primary sources,  
 14:09 18 because I was exhaustive and the published peer  
 14:09 19 review scientific literature which shows on the  
 14:09 20 one hand an evolving consensus but also shows the  
 14:09 21 debates that were occurring at the time, debates  
 14:10 22 that we had forgotten about because that was 40,  
 14:10 23 50 years today. We all know today that  
 14:10 24 epidemiology works, this is the role of history.  
 14:10 25 I think the exhaustive 100 percent examination of

*Why no interviews?*

14:10 1 primary sources was indispensable to the opinions  
 14:10 2 that I formed. What does a historian do? Make a  
 14:10 3 good conscious effort to look at everything you  
 14:10 4 can realistically look at. You try to be  
 14:10 5 comprehensive. You try to be representative and  
 14:10 6 look at all sides of the story, look at opposing  
 14:10 7 views, not only what ideas were put out there but  
 14:10 8 how people responded to them. You look at  
 14:10 9 secondary sources to put things in context and  
 14:10 10 help explain these events that you are learning  
 14:10 11 from the primary sources; and in a good conscious,  
 14:10 12 good faith way you try to put it together. That's  
 14:10 13 exactly what I did in my work.  
 14:10 14 Q Did you discuss your findings and conclusions with  
 14:11 15 any other historians?  
 14:11 16 A I remember having occasional conversations at the  
 14:11 17 time, we are going back close to 15 years ago.  
 14:11 18 But I had conversation -- one of the fun things  
 14:11 19 about scholarship is the opportunity is to talk  
 14:11 20 and discuss your ideas. I had conversations both  
 14:11 21 with historians as well as with physicians who  
 14:11 22 lived through the period. Does this make sense to  
 14:11 23 you. So I had conversations with a variety of  
 14:11 24 people.  
 14:11 25 Q Other than the notes that you made on your various

14:13 1 it.  
 14:13 2 Q Have you ever written any article with respect to  
 14:13 3 your study?  
 14:13 4 A I have not done so.  
 14:13 5 Q Why not?  
 14:13 6 A Two reasons. Number 1, from the very beginning  
 14:13 7 one of the conditions that I insisted on with  
 14:13 8 Arnold & Porter in terms of whether I would  
 14:13 9 undertake this was the complete freedom, including  
 14:13 10 the freedom to publish. So there were never any  
 14:13 11 restrictions. On the other hand, I don't know how  
 14:14 12 it is for you, but for me writing is hard work,  
 14:14 13 and the additional amount of time that would have  
 14:14 14 been involved just to sit down and write a paper  
 14:14 15 would have been substantial. And though I did  
 14:14 16 this research in a very responsible and exhaustive  
 14:14 17 fashion, I didn't learn anything new. The common  
 14:14 18 wisdom that I had always heard even before  
 14:14 19 beginning this is you got some early studies in  
 14:14 20 the twenties and thirties and forties suggesting  
 14:14 21 smoking might cause lung cancer, you got a  
 14:14 22 watershed year of 1950, then you got this becoming  
 14:14 23 perhaps the most intensely investigated scientific  
 14:14 24 issue in the world, various controversies going on  
 14:14 25 at the root of which is the creation of a new

Why

14:11 1 primary and secondary source listings, did you  
 14:11 2 make any other kinds of notes or outlines or  
 14:11 3 reports or comments?  
 14:11 4 A No, I did not.  
 14:12 5 Q Looking back at it from hindsight, what else could  
 14:12 6 you have done in reaching your conclusions?  
 14:12 7 A In hindsight I don't think there is anything else  
 14:12 8 that I could have done reaching my conclusions for  
 14:12 9 the project that I was studying. I believe that I  
 14:12 10 studied this more thoroughly, more  
 14:12 11 comprehensively, more representatively, more  
 14:12 12 systematically than anyone in the world had done.  
 14:12 13 I don't think that there is anything else I could  
 14:12 14 have done. Now I could have changed careers. I  
 14:12 15 could have said instead of focusing on my  
 14:12 16 interested medical education I'm going to change  
 14:12 17 subjects and start exploring other aspects of  
 14:12 18 this. You mentioned a number of them in your  
 14:12 19 earlier questions, but I wasn't really interested  
 14:12 20 in this. This was a project that came at that  
 14:13 21 interval between finishing one book in medical  
 14:13 22 education, getting started in another book in  
 14:13 23 medical education. That's where my heart and  
 14:13 24 passion is. That's where I would estimate 95 to  
 14:13 25 97 percent of my time today is and I went back to

14:14 1 field of the epidemiology of chronic diseases, it  
 14:15 2 culminates with the last step of the Surgeon  
 14:15 3 General's report which helped bring clinical  
 14:15 4 epidemiology to maturity, which helped erase any  
 14:15 5 residual doubt that there might have been in the  
 14:15 6 scientific community that could be used as a  
 14:15 7 convenient data or understanding that cigarette  
 14:15 8 smoking causes lung cancer, the '64 Surgeon  
 14:15 9 General's report. That all was common knowledge  
 14:15 10 in the history of medicine. All the secondary  
 14:15 11 sources that I read had essentially similar  
 14:15 12 explanations. Had I found something different,  
 14:15 13 that would have been worth writing about. But the  
 14:15 14 fact is I didn't want to be the 21st person to  
 14:15 15 confirm the skin painting experiment. I didn't  
 14:15 16 think it was a valuable use of my time so I wasn't  
 14:15 17 really inclined to do that.  
 14:15 18 In addition, as I was finishing what I call  
 14:15 19 the first stage, the late eighties, early  
 14:15 20 nineties, those continued to appear important  
 14:16 21 papers by respected historians, most notably John  
 14:16 22 Burnham and Allan Brandt who I know is an expert  
 14:16 23 for you, that made essentially the same points, I  
 14:16 24 thought they were excellent papers. I saw little  
 14:16 25 to be gained from me doing all the work to write

Brandt makes the same point?

14:16 1 down John Burnham and Allan Brandt and many others  
 14:16 2 have said it very well. I wasn't adding anything  
 14:16 3 to it. Now I had found a new book to work on, I  
 14:16 4 wanted to get back to work on that.  
 14:16 5 I can guarantee you though, had I found  
 14:16 6 something different that had in some way  
 14:16 7 contradicted the common wisdom, then I would have  
 14:16 8 taken the effort to have written. But since  
 14:16 9 everything I found was confirmatory -- I like  
 14:16 10 doing new things. I don't get much joy being the  
 14:16 11 19th person to confirm something that is already  
 14:16 12 known and already been written about. So I went  
 14:16 13 back to my own work. That's where my efforts have  
 14:17 14 been since then.  
 14:17 15 **Q On Page 2 of your report, the section is headed**  
 14:17 16 **Overview of Opinions. And the first paragraph is,**  
 14:17 17 **"I expect to explain the principles of historical**  
 14:17 18 **analysis. Specifically I expect to testify about**  
 14:17 19 **the historical analysis of developments in**  
 14:17 20 **scientific and medical knowledge." Is there**  
 14:17 21 **anything you want to add about the principles of**  
 14:17 22 **historical analysis that you haven't testified to**  
 14:17 23 **this morning and this afternoon?**  
 14:17 24 **A Let me just reflect on that out loud to make sure**  
 14:17 25 **I haven't omitted anything. We have done a pretty**

14:19 1 cancer, not issues of company behavior, public  
 14:19 2 opinion, so forth. So I'm saying this out loud  
 14:19 3 just as an aid to myself but I think we've covered  
 14:19 4 it.  
 14:19 5 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record  
 14:19 6 for a tape change. The time is 2:16 PM.  
 14:35 7 (Short recess was taken.)  
 14:35 8 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: We are back on the  
 14:35 9 record. The time is 2:31 PM.  
 14:35 10 **Q Dr. Ludmerer, on Page 2 of your report, the second**  
 14:35 11 **paragraph, under "Overview opinions" states, "I**  
 14:35 12 **also expect to testify about the state of medical**  
 14:35 13 **knowledge of smoking cigarettes, disease, and a**  
 14:35 14 **possible relationship between cigarette smoking**  
 14:35 15 **and disease in the United States from the early**  
 14:36 16 **1900 to January, 1964."**  
 14:36 17 **A couple of questions. Here you have limited**  
 14:36 18 **this opinion strictly to the United States,**  
 14:36 19 **correct?**  
 14:36 20 **A Correct.**  
 14:36 21 **Q Smoking and disease in the United States. Again**  
 14:36 22 **when you say state of medical knowledge, that's**  
 14:36 23 **not popular knowledge, that's the medical and**  
 14:36 24 **scientific community, is that correct?**  
 14:36 25 **A That is correct. I'm using medical and scientific**

14:17 1 thorough job as we have gone. We've talked about  
 14:18 2 the importance of having a context, we have talked  
 14:18 3 about the importance of being accurate and fair in  
 14:18 4 how you represent material, that was my criticism  
 14:18 5 you recall of Dr. Harris's report. You have  
 14:18 6 importance of being comprehensive, looking at all  
 14:18 7 sides of the issue, not just one point of view,  
 14:18 8 but the responses to it and what other issues  
 14:18 9 there were, what sort of rehashing was evoked,  
 14:18 10 that type of thing. You have the importance of  
 14:18 11 not using hindsight. People at the time made  
 14:18 12 judgments based on what is known then, not on what  
 14:18 13 is subsequently known and that thing, we have  
 14:18 14 discussed that. We have discussed the importance  
 14:19 15 of understanding how science and medicine do not  
 14:19 16 evolve in straight lines from ignorance to truth  
 14:19 17 and all the messiness of that, how the consensus  
 14:19 18 can be wrong, how seemingly have a rational idea  
 14:19 19 and can ultimately turn out to be correct. How  
 14:19 20 good work can be overlooked for honest reasons but  
 14:19 21 ignored and then rediscovered, things of that  
 14:19 22 sort. We talked about the importance of putting  
 14:19 23 borders on project, otherwise you never get  
 14:19 24 anything done. For me the border was the  
 14:19 25 scientific understanding of the causes of lung

14:36 1 interchangeably, both of which are completely  
 14:36 2 different from community or popular so that is a  
 14:36 3 correct statement.  
 14:36 4 **Q Or media knowledge?**  
 14:36 5 **A Correct.**  
 14:36 6 **Q And again, you use the word disease so we are not**  
 14:36 7 **just speaking of lung cancer, we are talking about**  
 14:36 8 **many, many diseases that might be associated with**  
 14:36 9 **smoking, is that correct?**  
 14:36 10 **A That's correct. As you can see from my**  
 14:36 11 **bibliography, the focus of my research, the focus**  
 14:36 12 **of my opinions is on lung cancer. On the other**  
 14:36 13 **hand one get a sense of other associations and**  
 14:37 14 **other diseases. So I think it fair to use the**  
 14:37 15 **term "disease."**  
 14:37 16 **Q This statement also starts, in the early 1900's,**  
 14:37 17 **it goes to January, 1964.**  
 14:37 18 **A Correct.**  
 14:37 19 **Q Do you consider yourself qualified to give an**  
 14:37 20 **expert opinion with respect to the state of the**  
 14:37 21 **medical knowledge of smoking cigarettes, disease,**  
 14:37 22 **and a possible relationship between cigarette**  
 14:37 23 **smoking and disease in the United States after**  
 14:37 24 **January, 1964?**  
 14:37 25 **A Not as an expert. I have not studied that and I**

14:37 1 am not prepared to speak about events and the  
 14:37 2 scientific study after January, '64.  
 14:37 3 Q This relates to the term "state of medical  
 14:37 4 knowledge." Wasn't the state of medical  
 14:37 5 knowledge--  
 14:37 6 A Excuse me, where are you?  
 14:37 7 Q That same sentence, the second paragraph. "The  
 14:37 8 state of medical knowledge." Wasn't the state of  
 14:38 9 medical knowledge in this country the same in  
 14:38 10 December, 1963, as it was in January, 1964 after  
 14:38 11 the Surgeon General's report was released?  
 14:38 12 A I would not agree with that statement, because of  
 14:38 13 the extraordinary power and impact of the Surgeon  
 14:38 14 General's report itself which in my estimation  
 14:38 15 made a major intellectual contribution to our  
 14:38 16 understanding of this issue, particularly its  
 14:38 17 announcement of the five criteria. I believe the  
 14:38 18 Surgeon General's report, although it was based on  
 14:38 19 existing work, that is true, I believe it made a  
 14:38 20 new intellectual contribution of its own. It was  
 14:38 21 more than just a summation. I consider it one of  
 14:38 22 the great scientific documents of the 20th  
 14:38 23 century.  
 14:38 24 Q But as far as the state of medical knowledge, it  
 14:39 25 was based on existing medical knowledge, is that

14:40 1 All of that ties in with each other. In my  
 14:40 2 estimate it is an original contribution, an  
 14:40 3 incredibly important contribution, and to make the  
 14:40 4 statement that things in December of '63 were the  
 14:40 5 same as in January of '64, I do not believe that  
 14:41 6 is a correct statement because of the importance  
 14:41 7 of the Surgeon General's first report.  
 14:41 8 Q Let me reword it then. What I meant to say was to  
 14:41 9 take the term you use here, that you just  
 14:41 10 testified that there was no new data. The state  
 14:41 11 of medical knowledge, the data that was available  
 14:41 12 in December, 1963, the medical data that was  
 14:41 13 available, was no different than the medical data  
 14:41 14 that was available the day after the Surgeon  
 14:41 15 General's report was released, is that true?  
 14:41 16 A If you are looking at the basic data itself, I  
 14:41 17 think that is correct. If you are looking at ways  
 14:41 18 of thinking and interpreting data, ways of making  
 14:41 19 sense of the world, that did change.  
 14:41 20 Q You said some of the Surgeon General's, some of  
 14:41 21 the articles that they used, some of the studies  
 14:41 22 they reviewed were unpublished. Do you know what  
 14:41 23 percentage of the studies that the Surgeon General  
 14:41 24 considers in the 1964 report were unpublished?  
 14:42 25 A The Surgeon General, as I recall, doesn't say

All of one document.

14:39 1 correct?  
 14:39 2 A It was based on existing data and studies. But  
 14:39 3 the issue always in science is not just data but  
 14:39 4 how you interpret the data and what conclusions  
 14:39 5 you can draw from it. So it is correct that the  
 14:39 6 Surgeon General's report evaluated existing  
 14:39 7 studies, including unpublished studies, so from  
 14:39 8 that perspective the Surgeon General's committee  
 14:39 9 had access to information that the general  
 14:39 10 scientific community might have, but the question  
 14:39 11 is what sense do you make of this. And it was  
 14:39 12 brilliant in terms of how it interpreted the data,  
 14:39 13 the definition of the five criteria of causality,  
 14:40 14 how one can use epidemiological tools particularly  
 14:40 15 with coherency to draw conclusions about causality  
 14:40 16 and the absence of direct laboratory evidence that  
 14:40 17 the scientific community for centuries  
 14:40 18 traditionally been accustomed to. In my mind that  
 14:40 19 is a pretty important conceptual revolution. It  
 14:40 20 is not new data. It's a conceptual revolution and  
 14:40 21 I think in my opinion is the final step in the  
 14:40 22 evolution of our current recognition that  
 14:40 23 cigarette smoking causes lung cancer. It helped  
 14:40 24 create a new field, the field of chronic  
 14:40 25 epidemiology, epidemiology of chronic diseases.

14:42 1 specifically so I don't know what percentage that  
 14:42 2 would be. But it does make a point of two things  
 14:42 3 that I think are pertinent to that. Number 1, it  
 14:42 4 points out how much new published information  
 14:42 5 appeared in the intervening four or five years.  
 14:42 6 How much new material there was for it to evaluate  
 14:42 7 and to consider, how the case had grown stronger  
 14:42 8 even from Surgeon General Burney's 1959 statement.  
 14:42 9 So the amount of published information is larger  
 14:43 10 and more impressive in '64 even than it had been a  
 14:43 11 few years before then. In addition to that, the  
 14:43 12 Surgeon General points out the inspiring  
 14:43 13 cooperation it received from all sorts of  
 14:43 14 scientists and workers who shared unpublished  
 14:43 15 information or we have this article going to press  
 14:43 16 or this sort of thing with them. It doesn't give  
 14:43 17 an amount of that but it does make a point of  
 14:43 18 praising the scientific community in general for  
 14:43 19 sharing with them the latest that may not have yet  
 14:43 20 made press.  
 14:43 21 Q When you say intervening four or five years, you  
 14:43 22 are talking about the years between the January,  
 14:43 23 '64 Surgeon General's report and Surgeon General  
 14:43 24 Burney's 1959 statement on smoking and lung  
 14:43 25 cancer?

14:43 1 A That is correct. I am saying that the scientific  
14:43 2 case that cigarette smoking causes lung cancer  
14:44 3 grew stronger from 1959 through January, 1964 and  
14:44 4 that medical sentiment -- and the Surgeon General  
14:44 5 comments on this too, that one reason they did the  
14:44 6 report was that as much sentiment as there may  
14:44 7 have been in 1959, that there has been a decided  
14:44 8 shift in the intervening four or five years as new  
14:44 9 information has come in and new data has come in  
14:44 10 and that medical sentiment has shifted yet even  
14:44 11 further from 1959 to 1964. That is correct.  
14:44 12 Q The next sentence in that section starts,  
14:44 13 "Beginning in 1950," it says, "Beginning in 1950,  
14:44 14 medical and scientific articles began appearing in  
14:44 15 the leading scientific and medical journals,  
14:44 16 suggesting a possible link between cigarette  
14:44 17 smoking and lung cancer." And then I want you to  
14:44 18 skip to the next page now, Page 3. The heading is  
14:44 19 "Statements of opinions and basis." Your first  
14:44 20 sentence there is, "I have concluded based upon my  
14:45 21 review of the literature that there was no  
14:45 22 credible evidence linking cigarette smoking to  
14:45 23 lung cancer or any life-threatening disease before  
14:45 24 1950." Is that still your opinion as we sit here  
14:45 25 today?

14:47 1 way was assembled to persuade more than a handful  
14:47 2 of people that cigarette smoking was a real  
14:47 3 possibility as the cause of lung cancer, something  
14:47 4 of that sort. I would agree with that  
14:47 5 phraseology.  
14:47 6 If you examine the Surgeon General's report,  
14:47 7 the Surgeon General essentially says the same  
14:47 8 thing in 1964 report, that earlier suggestions and  
14:47 9 studies go back, but 1950 is a watershed year. So  
14:47 10 I do maintain the importance of 1950. And then  
14:47 11 the types of hazards that were associated with  
14:47 12 cigarette smoking, the other part of your  
14:47 13 question, before 1950, Buerger's Disease, tobacco  
14:48 14 amblyopia, the suggestion had been made that  
14:48 15 cigarette smoking might cause lung cancer but you  
14:48 16 have to put things in context. It was not an idea  
14:48 17 that evoked much of a response if you were looking  
14:48 18 at the thirties and the forties. Textbooks didn't  
14:48 19 mention it, review articles didn't mention it. If  
14:48 20 people mentioned it at all, often they said we  
14:48 21 have heard this idea but there is no data, it is  
14:48 22 speculative. One of the pioneers, one of the  
14:48 23 leaders the prospectus study says as late as 1947  
14:48 24 he considered it to be nonsense. So those would  
14:48 25 be the two changes or the two events; the linkage

14:45 1 A Yes, it is. I think I would elaborate in a way  
14:45 2 that will shorten the summation. It is hard to  
14:45 3 do. But the two specific points are number 1,  
14:45 4 there were concerns of the health hazards of  
14:45 5 cigarette smoking expressed before 1950. I do not  
14:45 6 want to give the impression that I am unaware of  
14:45 7 those. That is very much part of this story. On  
14:45 8 the other hand, the amount and quality of data in  
14:45 9 the 1930's and forties was really pretty minimal.  
14:46 10 It was speculative, uncontrolled studies, letters  
14:46 11 to the editors, experimental studies that couldn't  
14:46 12 be replicated by other individuals.  
14:46 13 Participants in this, in these events look at  
14:46 14 1950 as a watershed year. That's not my term,  
14:46 15 that's Sir Richard Doll's term, how the evidence  
14:46 16 that began appearing in 1950 was so much more  
14:46 17 impressive and disturbing than the types of  
14:46 18 evidence that had been there before, if you are  
14:46 19 looking at cigarette smoking and lung cancer. I'm  
14:46 20 paraphrasing Sir Richard Doll, but he says reports  
14:46 21 about cigarette smoking and lung cancer go back  
14:46 22 for awhile but it wasn't until 1950 with the  
14:46 23 publication of the various reports that for the  
14:47 24 first time a sufficient amount of high quality  
14:47 25 information obtained in a sufficiently responsible

14:48 1 of cigarette smoking with other illnesses before  
14:48 2 1950 but the focus of lung cancer really emerging  
14:48 3 with 1950 and those studies as well with other  
14:48 4 serious diseases, then the importance of 1950 as a  
14:48 5 watershed year.  
14:48 6 Not the first time anyone made the suggestion  
14:48 7 or made the claim, but when using Dr. Doll's  
14:48 8 words, when you have a sufficient amount of  
14:49 9 responsibly obtained and credible evidence being  
14:49 10 brought forth to persuade the entire scientific  
14:49 11 community, not just a handful of those at the  
14:49 12 margin that cigarette smoking might be responsible  
14:49 13 for a material amount of significant disease.  
14:49 14 Something like that. I'm paraphrasing Dr. Doll.  
14:49 15 But I would agree with that new prediction.  
14:49 16 Q Well what Dr. Doll then is saying is that more  
14:49 17 impressive, more disturbing and more persuasive  
14:49 18 medical and scientific articles began appearing in  
14:49 19 1950 but that's not what you say here. You say  
14:49 20 beginning in 1950 medical and scientific articles  
14:49 21 began appearing. Would you agree that before  
14:49 22 1950, medical and scientific articles began  
14:49 23 appearing in leading scientific and medical  
14:49 24 journals suggesting a possible link between  
14:49 25 cigarette smoking and lung cancer?

14:50 1 A I'm saying that to be accurate one has to be  
 14:50 2 comprehensive, and you have to look at the quality  
 14:50 3 of the article and the response to them. I would  
 14:50 4 adhere to this view and it is very consistent with  
 14:50 5 Dr. Doll. The suggestion that smoking causes lung  
 14:50 6 cancer is not a new suggestion. But the quality  
 14:50 7 of evidence was very poor and if you look at the  
 14:50 8 scientific community, there are not many people  
 14:50 9 who are persuaded by that. If you look at the  
 14:50 10 reviews of the subject of lung cancer as late as  
 14:50 11 1947, 1948, '49, you see the cause of lung cancer  
 14:50 12 being listed as unknown, you don't see in the  
 14:50 13 textbooks relations with cigarette smoking being  
 14:50 14 drawn. That's what changes after 1950. Not the  
 14:50 15 idea, but the fact that now we are getting some  
 14:50 16 well done studies, the evidence it is not just  
 14:50 17 someone writing a letter to the editor or doing an  
 14:50 18 uncontrolled study but that the first of the  
 14:51 19 better done epidemiology studies that led to the  
 14:51 20 second revolution in epidemiology, the quality of  
 14:51 21 the data, the amount of the data, and that's why  
 14:51 22 so many people, including Dr. Doll, and several of  
 14:51 23 the surgeon generals look at 1950 and use the term  
 14:51 24 watershed year. I agree with that.  
 14:51 25 But of course it is correct to point out and

14:52 1 you are to be a responsible historian. If you  
 14:53 2 look at Menne and Anderson writing in JAMA, for  
 14:53 3 example, in 1941, they talk about that essentially  
 14:53 4 what we have is speculation but not data.  
 14:53 5 The Ochsner and DeBakey articles of 1939 and  
 14:53 6 1941 were uncontrolled. They actually studied the  
 14:53 7 subject and retracted that view. They did a  
 14:53 8 controlled study, which they did not do in 1939  
 14:53 9 and 1941. They were unable to demonstrate a  
 14:53 10 relationship between cigarette smoking and lung  
 14:53 11 cancer, and between 1947 and 1948 wrote seven or  
 14:53 12 eight public retractions of that concept. So my  
 14:53 13 personal view that their inability to demonstrate  
 14:53 14 the relationship that they hypothesized in 1939  
 14:53 15 was one of the major reasons why there was still  
 14:53 16 in the western world skepticism toward that  
 14:53 17 concept in the late forties. They advanced the  
 14:54 18 idea, they studied it, they had negative results,  
 14:54 19 they concluded they were wrong, they retracted  
 14:54 20 their conclusion. Now, of course, later on they  
 14:54 21 came on board. But I think the '48 study needs  
 14:54 22 retraction has to be added to the '39. So there  
 14:54 23 is a lot of staccato. This --  
 14:54 24 Q Would you agree that the article was published  
 14:54 25 before 1950?

14:51 1 important to point out that the idea is not a new  
 14:51 2 one. It is not that no one had ever made that  
 14:51 3 suggestion before, the suggestion that lung cancer  
 14:51 4 is caused by cigarette smoking does go back for a  
 14:51 5 few decades. No one had data. It was speculative  
 14:51 6 for the most part, and that was the problem. It  
 14:51 7 also violated common sense based on existing  
 14:51 8 paradigms. Those are the things that changed in  
 14:51 9 1950, why in 1950 you have a whole new ear and  
 14:51 10 understanding of these relationships.  
 14:52 11 Q Did you read an article by Alton Ochsner,  
 14:52 12 O-C-H-S-N-E-R, and Michael DeBakey, D-E, capital  
 14:52 13 B-A-K-E-Y, called "The symposium on cancer  
 14:52 14 analysis of 79 collected cases and presentation of  
 14:52 15 seven personal cases in surgery, gynecology and  
 14:52 16 obstetrics, written in 1939?  
 14:52 17 A Yes, I did.  
 14:52 18 Q Is it still your opinion that that particular  
 14:52 19 article did not suggest a possible link between  
 14:52 20 cigarette smoking and lung cancer?  
 14:52 21 A That article suggested a link between cigarette  
 14:52 22 smoking and lung cancer and in fact it attracted a  
 14:52 23 lot of attention. The problem is that it had no  
 14:52 24 data. There were no controls. Scientists -- and  
 14:52 25 again this is why one has to be comprehensive if

14:54 1 A Yes, of course.  
 14:54 2 Q Would you agree that it appeared in a leading  
 14:54 3 scientific and medical journal?  
 14:54 4 A Of course.  
 14:54 5 Q Would you agree that it suggested a possible link  
 14:54 6 between cigarette smoking and lung cancer?  
 14:54 7 A Yes, I would.  
 14:54 8 Q Have you -- are you familiar with the article by  
 14:54 9 A. Arkin, A-R-K-I-N, and D.H. Wagner, W-A-G-N-E-R,  
 14:54 10 entitled "Primary Carcinoma of the Lung,"  
 14:54 11 published in the Journal of the American Medical  
 14:54 12 Association in 1936?  
 14:54 13 A Yes, I am.  
 14:54 14 Q Was this article published before 1936?  
 14:55 15 A It was published --  
 14:55 16 Q Before 1950?  
 14:55 17 A Yes, it was.  
 14:55 18 Q Is the Journal of the American Medical Association  
 14:55 19 a leading scientific and medical journal?  
 14:55 20 A I consider it to be so.  
 14:55 21 Q And did the article suggest a possible link  
 14:55 22 between cancer smoking and lung cancer?  
 14:55 23 A It offered that as a speculation, but again  
 14:55 24 getting back to principles of doing history, it is  
 14:55 25 important to assess the quality, the validity. It

14:55 1 was important. It was an important suggestion.  
 14:55 2 Subsequently proved to be correct. But that paper  
 14:55 3 was not a controlled study. It was not an  
 14:55 4 epidemiological study. It was another of the  
 14:55 5 handful of studies that appeared in the thirties  
 14:55 6 and forties where you had some well-intentioned  
 14:55 7 physicians, use often chest surgeons who had their  
 14:55 8 own series of patients but did not have controls.  
 14:56 9 And they would say 80 percent of our patients with  
 14:56 10 lung cancer smoke but they didn't have any  
 14:56 11 controls. Smoking had already become a very  
 14:56 12 widespread habit in the United States. Maybe 70,  
 14:56 13 80 percent of the general population smoked. It  
 14:56 14 was not considered -- without the controls it was  
 14:56 15 not considered persuasive by people at the time.  
 14:56 16 I think that context has to be added and that  
 14:56 17 explains the opinion of the Surgeon General and  
 14:56 18 Dr. Doll and others. The suggestion has been  
 14:56 19 made, there are clinical studies, but it wasn't  
 14:56 20 until 1950 that you have a sufficient body of  
 14:56 21 quality data and representative data obtained in a  
 14:56 22 responsible way.  
 14:56 23 An uncontrolled study is not a responsible  
 14:56 24 epidemiology study. That's why they call 1950 the  
 14:56 25 watershed year. They are calling it a watershed

14:58 1 shocked the scientific community and brought even  
 14:58 2 more attention to the issue.  
 14:58 3 **Q Outpouring is not the word you use. You used the**  
 14:58 4 **word "begin." "Medical articles begin appearing."**  
 14:58 5 **Not an outpouring begins appearing. Just medical**  
 14:58 6 **and scientific articles.**  
 14:58 7 A Well, I think that as nice of a person as you  
 14:58 8 obviously are that I think you are doing a little  
 14:58 9 bit of quibbling over years. They began appearing  
 14:58 10 then. I'm adding for elaboration of a short  
 14:58 11 document that the number of articles begin to  
 14:58 12 soar. But I think it is correct, 1950, the amount  
 14:59 13 and the nature of the evidence changes, and that's  
 14:59 14 the point that I make here and that's the point  
 14:59 15 that I will continue to make.  
 14:59 16 **Q But you would agree that before 1950 the medical**  
 14:59 17 **and scientific articles had begun appearing in**  
 14:59 18 **leading scientific and medical journals,**  
 14:59 19 **suggesting the possible link between cigarette**  
 14:59 20 **smoking and lung cancer without any**  
 14:59 21 **qualifications?**  
 14:59 22 A I would very much agree with the statement that  
 14:59 23 the suggestion that cigarette smoking causes lung  
 14:59 24 cancer had been made before 1950. I'm pointing  
 14:59 25 out that the evidence to document that statement

14:56 1 because of the quality of work that came out and  
 14:56 2 the degree of concern that this working both in  
 14:57 3 the scientific community. No one, them or I, is  
 14:57 4 saying that no one made the suggestion before.  
 14:57 5 You are providing some excellent examples of  
 14:57 6 people who in earlier years threw in that  
 14:57 7 suggestion.  
 14:57 8 I would cite again Dr. Menne Anderson in 1941  
 14:57 9 also writing in the American Journal of Medical  
 14:57 10 Association who used the words, "This is pure  
 14:57 11 speculative nonsense. We need data. And without  
 14:57 12 controls and epidemiological studies, no  
 14:57 13 conclusions could be considered verifiable."  
 14:57 14 **Q But your opinion as it stands now is incorrect**  
 14:57 15 **without all of those qualifications, correct?**  
 14:57 16 A Which opinion are you referring to?  
 14:57 17 **Q Beginning in 1950 medical and scientific articles**  
 14:57 18 **began appearing --**  
 14:57 19 A What page are you on?  
 14:57 20 **Q I'm on Page 2, the head of the section is called**  
 14:57 21 **"Overview of opinions." It's the third paragraph.**  
 14:57 22 **It starts, "Beginning in 1950."**  
 14:58 23 A Well, I think that's a correct statement,  
 14:58 24 beginning in 1950 you got an outpouring of  
 14:58 25 important, well-done, well-conducted studies that

14:59 1 was pretty scantily. I'm pointing out that an  
 14:59 2 historian has to look at things in context how  
 14:59 3 people respond to the ideas. Not many people  
 14:59 4 bought into that view. But yes, you can find that  
 14:59 5 statement there.  
 14:59 6 But what I'm doing is at the one hand  
 14:59 7 acknowledging the accuracy of that statement but  
 14:59 8 at the same time trying to be representative and  
 14:59 9 point out that you have to be comprehensive and  
 14:59 10 look at all of the data and see how people  
 14:59 11 responded to it, and the degree of concern that  
 15:00 12 was evoked by the early suggestions was minimal  
 15:00 13 compared with the degree of concern that came in  
 15:00 14 the watershed year of 1950. As I said before,  
 15:00 15 Ochsner and DeBakey's failure to demonstrate the  
 15:00 16 relationship that they postulated in 1939 and 1941  
 15:00 17 in my opinion contributed to the relative lack of  
 15:00 18 concern before 1950.  
 15:00 19 **Q Are you aware of an article by Raymond Pearl,**  
 15:00 20 **P-E-A-R-L, entitled "Tobacco Smoking and**  
 15:00 21 **Longevity" in the publication Science in 1938?**  
 15:00 22 A Correct. That's another notable part of the  
 15:00 23 pre-1950 literature. He was --  
 15:00 24 **Q Does that article suggest a possible link between**  
 15:00 25 **cigarette smoking and lung cancer?**

Page 170

15:00 1 A My recollection is that it talks about cigarette  
 15:01 2 smoking and decreased longevity. Without seeing  
 15:01 3 the article I don't know if it says anything -- I  
 15:01 4 don't remember if it says anything specifically  
 15:01 5 about longevity. Pearl is actually one of my  
 15:01 6 people that I admire. He was an eminent  
 15:01 7 biologist. He played a role in my first book on  
 15:01 8 the eugenics movement in American society. I  
 15:01 9 admire Raymond Pearl. He was a biometrician.  
 15:01 10 But again, from the standpoint of responsible  
 15:01 11 history, one needs to be comprehensive and look at  
 15:01 12 the entirety of the data to get a sense of what  
 15:01 13 was going on rather than to pick and choose  
 15:01 14 selectively. This can easily be done by picking  
 15:01 15 the examples that you are. Pearl was criticized  
 15:01 16 for very statistical reasons at the time. Dr.  
 15:01 17 Doll himself in his recollections of the smoking  
 15:01 18 controversy discusses how Pearl was considered a  
 15:01 19 marginal figure, that there were flaws with his  
 15:02 20 argument, people tended to discount it. In  
 15:02 21 retrospect we know that he was right. But at the  
 15:02 22 time it did not evoke a considerable amount of  
 15:02 23 concern. But it was there. It is notable and it  
 15:02 24 should be commented on. It was very much a part  
 15:02 25 of the printed pre-1950 literature.

Page 171

15:02 1 Q What about the article by Frederick Hoffman,  
 15:02 2 H-O-F-F-M-A-N entitled "Cancer and Smoking  
 15:02 3 Habits," in the Annals of Surgery in 1931, was  
 15:02 4 that article published before 1950?  
 15:02 5 A Yes, it was.  
 15:02 6 Q Was it in a leading scientific and medical  
 15:02 7 journal?  
 15:02 8 A Yes, it was.  
 15:02 9 Q And did it suggest a possible link between  
 15:02 10 cigarette smoking and lung cancer?  
 15:02 11 A I remember that Hoffman had an article. Do you  
 15:02 12 happen to have a copy of the article to show me?  
 15:02 13 Because I do not remember that article as well as  
 15:02 14 I do the others to see the exact wording. Were  
 15:03 15 there controls? I really don't think so. Was he  
 15:03 16 talking about lung cancer, was he talking about  
 15:03 17 cancer of the mouth and pipe smoking. I just  
 15:03 18 don't remember. Sometimes these things are  
 15:03 19 confused because the literature relating pipe  
 15:03 20 smoking and oral cancer is struggling and  
 15:03 21 cigarette smoking and lung cancer. I'm looking at  
 15:03 22 cigarette smoking and lung cancer and those are  
 15:03 23 the sorts of articles you need to look at. I  
 15:03 24 would have to see the Hoffman.  
 15:03 25 Q No, I don't have it with me. How about F.E.

Page 172

15:03 1 Tylecote, T-Y-L-E-C-O-T-E, his article is "Cancer  
 15:03 2 of the lung," published in Lancet in 1927. Was  
 15:03 3 that article published before 1950?  
 15:03 4 A Yes, it was, and as I said, there were a number of  
 15:03 5 articles in the twenties and thirties and forties  
 15:03 6 that made the suggestion. I would have to see  
 15:03 7 that particular article. I recall Dr. Doll's  
 15:04 8 description of it being correct, the article is  
 15:04 9 that it lacks data, is not done in a responsible  
 15:04 10 way. I would have to again see what he had in the  
 15:04 11 way of controls. The allegation and assertion is  
 15:04 12 being made during this period. What is lacking is  
 15:04 13 much in the way of evidence or controls or  
 15:04 14 experimental studies to back up that assertion at  
 15:04 15 a time that lots of people smoke are smoking and  
 15:04 16 not getting sick. So again the response that that  
 15:04 17 article evoked was small relative to the response  
 15:04 18 that occurred to the 1950 articles. But yes, it  
 15:04 19 was there, of course it was.  
 15:04 20 Q In the next sentence, we are still on Page 2 of  
 15:04 21 that fourth paragraph, "There were varying views  
 15:04 22 within the scientific community regarding these  
 15:05 23 studies." I'm just curious, besides published  
 15:05 24 medical and scientific articles, what else do  
 15:05 25 members of the medical and scientific community

Page 173

15:05 1 refer to or consider or rely on when they are  
 15:05 2 forming their views and beliefs about an issue?  
 15:05 3 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 15:05 4 A You are referring to -- can you show me where you  
 15:05 5 are referring?  
 15:05 6 Q We are on Page 2, on the fourth paragraph.  
 15:05 7 A Beginning in 1950?  
 15:05 8 Q I'm sorry, third paragraph. We discussed that  
 15:05 9 first sentence. Now we are on the second sentence  
 15:05 10 of that paragraph when you talk about varying  
 15:05 11 views within the scientific community regarding  
 15:05 12 the studies. Besides the studies, I'm just asking  
 15:05 13 you a general question, besides scientific  
 15:05 14 studies, published articles, what do members of  
 15:05 15 the scientific and medical community rely on,  
 15:05 16 consider, what are some other tools they use when  
 15:06 17 they are coming up with their views or beliefs on  
 15:06 18 a medical or scientific issue?  
 15:06 19 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 15:06 20 A Well, the major source of information as you  
 15:06 21 suggest is the literature itself, as we have been  
 15:06 22 talking about all day long. The scientific  
 15:06 23 literature is the currency. I think, wearing my  
 15:06 24 medical hat now, not just the historical hat,  
 15:06 25 people talk about articles. It is not just that

So, why no  
interviews?

15:06 1 something comes out. Again, you have to put  
 15:06 2 yourself in the reality of the real world at the  
 15:06 3 time things happen and not some abstract idealized  
 15:06 4 notion.  
 15:06 5 The fact that an article is written even in a  
 15:06 6 prestigious journal doesn't necessarily mean that  
 15:06 7 it is correct, doesn't necessarily mean that it is  
 15:06 8 read. If it is read, someone may read it six  
 15:07 9 months later and not immediately because it gets  
 15:07 10 stuck in the pile. All sorts of practical things  
 15:07 11 that make sense in a common sense happen in a way  
 15:07 12 that scientists operate.  
 15:07 13 In addition, science is a social phenomena.  
 15:07 14 Scientists are not individual actors working by  
 15:07 15 themselves. Part of the fun of it is that you are  
 15:07 16 talking with others, you are conversing, you are  
 15:07 17 interchanging, you are exchanging views; so if you  
 15:07 18 do have a notable article come out, you discuss  
 15:07 19 it, you have a journal club, you have seminars,  
 15:07 20 someone presents it or maybe you are having lunch,  
 15:07 21 did you see Dr. Smith's article in last week's New  
 15:07 22 England Journal of Medicine. You did? What do  
 15:07 23 you think about it. There is a lot of this that  
 15:07 24 goes on.  
 15:07 25 Sociologists have talked about opinion

15:09 1 this is discussed not at great length, but it is  
 15:09 2 discussed in the first Surgeon General's report  
 15:10 3 where they talk about the possibility of adding  
 15:10 4 additives to cigarettes that in some way might  
 15:10 5 counteract the apparent carcinogen. In the  
 15:10 6 fifties I would say with Dr. Wynder, I don't  
 15:10 7 remember if it was the mid fifties or late  
 15:10 8 fifties, I would tend to say the mid fifties he  
 15:10 9 wrote about this in some of his published  
 15:10 10 statements, and this concept was pursued in the  
 15:10 11 Surgeon General's report of '64.  
 15:10 12 Q How about the public health -- public health  
 15:10 13 community's response to the reduction of nicotine  
 15:10 14 yields, what years are we talking about the public  
 15:10 15 health community acting?  
 15:10 16 A I'm glad you asked that because nicotine is not  
 15:10 17 something that I have really looked into. My  
 15:10 18 knowledge of nicotine is that little was known  
 15:11 19 about it. The Surgeon General report in 1964  
 15:11 20 considers cigarette smoking to be a habit not to  
 15:11 21 be addictive. The Surgeon General's report was  
 15:11 22 less concerned about the biological consequences  
 15:11 23 of nicotine than today we are. Quite frankly if  
 15:11 24 this had been sent to me for my editing and review  
 15:11 25 today I would scratch that out. I appreciate you

15:07 1 setters in science. It is not if you got 500,000  
 15:08 2 physicians, it is not that every physician reads  
 15:08 3 the article immediately but the view of certain  
 15:08 4 opinion setters, the leading people in the field,  
 15:08 5 the chairs and that sort of thing influences  
 15:08 6 others. There is a permutation process. I could  
 15:08 7 go on. But these are examples of part of the  
 15:08 8 informal process of scientific dialog.  
 15:08 9 Q I believe it is the next paragraph, it starts, "I  
 15:08 10 expect to testify how the findings of these  
 15:08 11 studies were addressed by public health officials.  
 15:08 12 One response considered by the public health  
 15:08 13 community was the reduction in tar and nicotine  
 15:08 14 yields as a possible means of reducing the risks  
 15:08 15 associated with cigarettes."  
 15:08 16 When did the public health community consider  
 15:09 17 reducing tar and nicotine yields? What years?  
 15:09 18 A I will acknowledge to you that of all the  
 15:09 19 sentences in this summary review, this is the one  
 15:09 20 that, this particular sentence is the one that I  
 15:09 21 have been least involved with or thought the least  
 15:09 22 about. Given that qualification, I know that Dr.  
 15:09 23 Wynder himself published in the mid fifties on the  
 15:09 24 issue of developing filters and hoping that that  
 15:09 25 might obviate the cancer problem. In addition,

15:11 1 bringing that up. I'm talking about reduction in  
 15:11 2 tar. I'm only addressing lung cancer, not issues  
 15:11 3 of addiction and physiological stuff like that.  
 15:11 4 Let's delete those two words. We will make a note  
 15:11 5 that should I ever be asked to have an expert  
 15:11 6 statement like that in the future, those two will  
 15:11 7 not be there.  
 15:11 8 Q The two words being "tar" and "nicotine"?  
 15:11 9 A The two words being "and nicotine".  
 15:12 10 Q Were there any other responses by the public  
 15:12 11 health community other than the creation of the  
 15:12 12 first Surgeon General's advisory committee and the  
 15:12 13 public health community's reduction in tar yields  
 15:12 14 as a possible means of reducing risks?  
 15:12 15 A Yes, there were.  
 15:12 16 Q What were some of those?  
 15:12 17 A The chief response was the growing view, beginning  
 15:13 18 in 1954, that it is better not to smoke at all.  
 15:13 19 And you see various health organizations start  
 15:13 20 taking positions in the mid to late fifties on  
 15:13 21 this issue. Each of them set in their own way,  
 15:13 22 some said it more strongly, some said it less  
 15:13 23 strongly. You see the growing consensus that we  
 15:13 24 have inherited today that cigarette smoking is the  
 15:13 25 cause of lung cancer, better off not to smoke.

15:13 1 The first use of the term primary prevention  
 15:13 2 that I'm aware of from the American Public Health  
 15:13 3 Association was 1954. Somewhere around '56 or  
 15:13 4 '57, and you probably know these organizations  
 15:13 5 better than I, but various medical organizations  
 15:14 6 in the United States and in other countries began  
 15:14 7 taking positions to the effect that cigarette  
 15:14 8 smoking is a health danger. Often they would  
 15:14 9 revise an earlier opinion and come out with a  
 15:14 10 later opinion stronger than the earlier opinion,  
 15:14 11 which to my perspective is evidence of this  
 15:14 12 growing consensus, new information coming and the  
 15:14 13 rising tide.  
 15:14 14 The best example is probably the public  
 15:14 15 health surgeon -- the Public Health Service.  
 15:14 16 Surgeon General Burney in 1957 signed that  
 15:14 17 excessive cigarette smoking is -- or he may have  
 15:14 18 even said may be one of the causes in lung cancer  
 15:14 19 toward a stronger statement in 1959 when he says  
 15:14 20 that cigarette smoking is the principal cause of  
 15:15 21 lung cancer. You see these types of statements  
 15:15 22 from the Public Health Service, from other public  
 15:15 23 health organizations beginning in the fifties and  
 15:15 24 this recognition that and growing acceptance by  
 15:15 25 the cigarette smoking causes lung cancer and a

15:16 1 report, not listed on the reference material  
 15:16 2 supplied to the United States?  
 15:16 3 A No, I haven't.  
 15:16 4 Q Have you reviewed the opinions expressed by other  
 15:17 5 experts in this case? And my example to you would  
 15:17 6 be by reading their expert reports?  
 15:17 7 A I have read the expert reports of Allan Brandt and  
 15:17 8 Robert Proctor.  
 15:17 9 Q Have you read the report of Peter English?  
 15:17 10 A No.  
 15:17 11 Q Has the review of these deposition -- of these  
 15:17 12 expert reports changed any of the opinions in your  
 15:17 13 original report?  
 15:17 14 A No, they have not.  
 15:17 15 Q Based on any work that you have done since January  
 15:17 16 30, 2002, have you supplemented this report at  
 15:17 17 all?  
 15:17 18 A No, I have not.  
 15:17 19 Q Turning to Page 3 of your report, that first  
 15:17 20 sentence, "I have concluded, based upon my review  
 15:18 21 of literature, that there was no credible  
 15:18 22 scientific evidence linking cigarette smoke to  
 15:18 23 lung cancer or any life-threatening disease before  
 15:18 24 1950." What is your definition of credible  
 15:18 25 scientific evidence?

15:15 1 material amount of other disease, it's catching  
 15:15 2 on, it is growing, year by year it grows stronger.  
 15:15 3 I would say that was an even louder response than  
 15:15 4 the idea of looking for a safer smoke.  
 15:15 5 Q The last paragraph on Page 2 starts, "I  
 15:15 6 understand," "I understand that I may be asked to  
 15:15 7 offer opinions regarding the opinions and  
 15:15 8 testimony expressed by other witnesses in the  
 15:15 9 case. I receive the right to supplement this  
 15:15 10 report based on my continuing review of academic  
 15:15 11 literature and on the opinions expressed by other  
 15:15 12 experts in this case." We are speaking as of  
 15:16 13 today. Have you reviewed the opinions and  
 15:16 14 testimony expressed by any other witnesses in this  
 15:16 15 case?  
 15:16 16 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 15:16 17 A I haven't -- if by testimony you mean depositions  
 15:16 18 and that type to thing?  
 15:16 19 Q I think that would be the main example that I  
 15:16 20 would cite.  
 15:16 21 A To my recollection I have not reviewed depositions  
 15:16 22 of witnesses for either defense or plaintiff in  
 15:16 23 this case.  
 15:16 24 Q Have you reviewed any academic literature since  
 15:16 25 January 30, 2002, that's when you signed the

15:18 1 A Evidence means just the evidence, as opposed to  
 15:18 2 speculation and hypothesis. If you are looking at  
 15:18 3 clinical studies, you need controls. To have a  
 15:18 4 series of studies without controls is not really a  
 15:18 5 bonafide epidemiological study even by the old  
 15:18 6 fashioned standards, retrospective standards and  
 15:18 7 standards that existed at that time. This was  
 15:18 8 common very frequently in the thirties and  
 15:19 9 forties.  
 15:19 10 One of my favorite examples is the one I  
 15:19 11 mentioned to you before, Meane and Anderson, in  
 15:19 12 which they acknowledged that the suggestion had  
 15:19 13 been made many times and you listed yourself  
 15:19 14 before a number of people who had suggested that  
 15:19 15 cigarette smoking caused lung cancer, but just on  
 15:19 16 the basis of speculation, hey, I have got 80  
 15:19 17 patients that I have operated on, most of them  
 15:19 18 smoke, there is more smoking in the world today  
 15:19 19 than there was, maybe it is cigarette smoking.  
 15:19 20 But without controls, without proper study, such  
 15:19 21 conclusions, you don't really have evidence, you  
 15:19 22 have speculation. So I'm distinguishing between  
 15:19 23 hypothesizing and speculation and that type of  
 15:19 24 thing versus real evidence that you get from a  
 15:19 25 well-controlled, well done study. And credible,

15:19 1 I'm also using that as a shorthand for  
 15:20 2 reproducibility.  
 15:20 3 One of the important aspects in all of  
 15:20 4 scientific work is not in merely making an  
 15:20 5 observation, but in doing it in such a way that  
 15:20 6 other people can follow your techniques and do the  
 15:20 7 same thing and reproduce it. So there were also  
 15:20 8 some laboratory studies, primitive laboratory  
 15:20 9 studies in the twenties and thirties. And the  
 15:20 10 person whose name is most frequently associated  
 15:20 11 with that is Roffo from South America but no one  
 15:20 12 could confirm what he did. And that led his work  
 15:20 13 to be discounted at the time. People tried to  
 15:20 14 confirm his homographic studies and skin painting  
 15:20 15 studies. They were all unsuccessful. And he was  
 15:20 16 also, as Dr. Doll points out, very vague in  
 15:21 17 experimental details that he provided. So people  
 15:21 18 thought that he had not done what he asserted that  
 15:21 19 he had done.  
 15:21 20 So these, so reproducibility in evidence as  
 15:21 21 opposed to speculation are really the things that  
 15:21 22 I'm referring to here. As I said before in my own  
 15:21 23 view, Dr. Ochsner's inability to demonstrate a  
 15:21 24 relationship in the 1940's I personally believe  
 15:21 25 was instrumental in the skepticism toward the idea

15:23 1 credible scientific evidence linking cigarette  
 15:23 2 smoking to lung cancer.  
 15:23 3 A Well there is another question. Maybe it should  
 15:23 4 be read back because I want to make sure we are on  
 15:23 5 the same wave length.  
 15:23 6 (The following question was read back:  
 15:22 7 Q Is it your testimony that none of those 279  
 15:22 8 pieces of primary literature have any credible  
 15:22 9 scientific evidence linking cigarette smoking to  
 15:22 10 lung cancer?)  
 15:23 11 A What I'm saying is that the evidence was weak and  
 15:23 12 not taken very seriously. And historians have to  
 15:23 13 look at the response to studies, not just the  
 15:23 14 studies themselves. Someone makes a claim, how  
 15:24 15 did the rest of the scientific community react to  
 15:24 16 the claim. What I'm saying is that despite the  
 15:24 17 suggestions that were made by the several people  
 15:24 18 that you mentioned, those suggestions evoked  
 15:24 19 relatively little concern prior to 1950. The  
 15:24 20 common teaching prior to 1950 was that the cause  
 15:24 21 among cancer is unknown. Someone will go on to  
 15:24 22 say that a number of factors have been suggested  
 15:24 23 as possible causes, they would often list 15  
 15:24 24 factors, including cigarette smoking, but they  
 15:24 25 would go on to say that we really have no evidence

15:21 1 that cigarette smoking causes lung cancer that  
 15:21 2 persisted through 1950 and he retracted that idea  
 15:21 3 that has to be added to the discussion. And all  
 15:21 4 of this changes of course with using Dr. Doll's  
 15:21 5 term, the watershed years of 1950.  
 15:22 6 Q Exhibit 7 which is your -- the articles, the  
 15:22 7 studies that you read and they were written or  
 15:22 8 published between 1930 and 1950, contained 279  
 15:22 9 items.  
 15:22 10 A Right.  
 15:22 11 Q Is it your testimony that none of those 279 pieces  
 15:22 12 of primary literature have any credible scientific  
 15:22 13 evidence linking cigarette smoking to lung cancer?  
 15:22 14 A I'm saying that it is my testimony that, using  
 15:22 15 1950 as an arbitrary turning date, it would be  
 15:22 16 more accurate to say that the cause of lung cancer  
 15:22 17 is unknown. I think that would be a more accurate  
 15:22 18 way of saying that. I think this statement that  
 15:22 19 the cause of lung cancer is at present unknown is  
 15:22 20 in every review of the subject, published review  
 15:22 21 of the subject of lung cancer between 1930 and  
 15:22 22 1945.  
 15:23 23 Q I'm sorry, you are in the wrong place. The  
 15:23 24 sentence that I just said doesn't say anything  
 15:23 25 about lung cancer and unknown. It says no

15:24 1 to substantiate any of these at the moment. The  
 15:24 2 cause of lung cancer is unknown. This would be  
 15:24 3 the tone of the literature and of the textbooks  
 15:24 4 through the late forties. It is the watershed  
 15:24 5 year of 1950 in which that claim evokes much  
 15:25 6 greater attention and much greater concern.  
 15:25 7 Q On your Exhibit 7 you have listed 279 pieces of  
 15:25 8 primary literature you read. My question is, is  
 15:25 9 it your testimony, your opinion, that in none of  
 15:25 10 these 2-- we will forget about the 12 articles  
 15:25 11 that I had earlier. Now we have 279 that you have  
 15:25 12 written down; that in none of those is there any  
 15:25 13 credible scientific evidence linking cigarette  
 15:25 14 smoking to lung cancer?  
 15:25 15 A Well I would say there was very little, little  
 15:25 16 credible scientific evidence. Certainly the  
 15:25 17 suggestion had been made, but what is lacking is  
 15:25 18 on the clinical side, controls. What is lacking  
 15:25 19 on the experimental side is reproducibility  
 15:25 20 because the investigator who claimed that he had  
 15:25 21 been able to induce skin cancer with cigarette  
 15:26 22 fragments and identify benzoapyrene no one could  
 15:26 23 confirm that work and he was discounted. That is  
 15:26 24 what I am saying. Also, putting things in  
 15:26 25 context, very few of these articles before 1950

*Did he not have those on his list?*

Page 186

15:26 1 really deal with the issue of causation. And  
 15:26 2 again this gets back to the historian's  
 15:26 3 responsibility of looking at things in the context  
 15:26 4 of the time, not with our present understanding.  
 15:26 5 That's an no-no in history. Scientists in all  
 15:26 6 fields address questions that they consider  
 15:26 7 answerable with the techniques at the time.  
 15:26 8 The great majority of studies before 1950 are  
 15:26 9 not studies of the causes of lung cancer. Those  
 15:26 10 are clinical studies of various aspects of the  
 15:26 11 presentation and management of the disease; is the  
 15:26 12 increase in lung cancer that we are seeing  
 15:26 13 perceived or real, how does lung cancer behave,  
 15:27 14 what are the cell types, where does it go, what  
 15:27 15 organs does it metastasize to, how does it  
 15:27 16 metastasize, how does one make the diagnosis, how  
 15:27 17 does one treat it, etc., etc. That really is the  
 15:27 18 flavor of this information.  
 15:27 19 It would be an error on my part in this  
 15:27 20 discussion not to bring that point to your  
 15:27 21 attention if you are looking at the pre-1950  
 15:27 22 literature. It is easy to look at the handful of  
 15:27 23 papers that do go into the issue of cause. That  
 15:27 24 is a very tiny amount of the literature on lung  
 15:27 25 cancer before 1950 because the tools were

Page 187

15:27 1 primitive. As the marr change compared with the  
 15:27 2 post 1950 period where the issue of causation, not  
 15:27 3 clinical behavior and treatment of lung cancer  
 15:27 4 becomes the focus of concern.  
 15:27 5 Q What percent of these 279 articles talk about not  
 15:27 6 causation, but links between cigarette smoking and  
 15:27 7 lung cancer?  
 15:28 8 A It depends on how you talk about links. I would  
 15:28 9 say the typical review, the typical article might  
 15:28 10 be our experience with lung cancer. Here is our  
 15:28 11 patient - here is our population of patients and  
 15:28 12 we have seen maybe three patients with lung cancer  
 15:28 13 and here is how it compares with the general  
 15:28 14 experience, here is how we believe the diagnosis  
 15:28 15 should be made, how is how it should be treated,  
 15:28 16 here is how it spreads.  
 15:28 17 In those reviews many papers would have a  
 15:28 18 discussion of etiology. If you consider the one  
 15:28 19 paragraph discussion of etiology to be a  
 15:28 20 discussion of cause, then the number gets higher.  
 15:28 21 If, on the other hand, you read that paragraph and  
 15:29 22 say the cause of lung cancer is currently unknown,  
 15:29 23 here is a few things that have been suggested as  
 15:29 24 possibilities but we don't have any data, if you  
 15:29 25 consider that a discussion of lung cancer and

Page 188

15:29 1 cigarette smoking, then the percentage would be  
 15:29 2 higher. If you would discount that type of  
 15:29 3 paragraph in a larger article, then very few of  
 15:29 4 the papers really dealt with the issue of cause in  
 15:29 5 the way the papers that you cited today do.  
 15:29 6 Q We are not talking about cause. We are talking  
 15:29 7 about linking, linking cigarette smoking to lung  
 15:29 8 cancer. Haven't hit the discussion about  
 15:29 9 causation yet. Would you say at least 10 percent,  
 15:29 10 at least 28 of these articles?  
 15:29 11 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 15:29 12 A I haven't counted them or read them since 1988.  
 15:29 13 But as a guesstimate, I would say less than ten  
 15:29 14 percent. You are cherry picking. You are picking  
 15:29 15 the very best articles over a several decade  
 15:30 16 period. The typical article in here would say, as  
 15:30 17 I said before, the cause of lung cancer is  
 15:30 18 unknown, a number of factors have been suggested  
 15:30 19 as possible causes but we don't have evidence to  
 15:30 20 support any of these at the moment. The cause of  
 15:30 21 lung cancer is unknown. If you really wish to  
 15:30 22 understand the tenor of the period, what people at  
 15:30 23 the time are saying, that's a pretty accurate  
 15:30 24 reflection.  
 15:30 25 Q I'm trying to understand the tenor of your word

Page 189

15:30 1 here which is no. If I'm cherry-picking, I'm  
 15:30 2 sorry, but it is in your opinion. You are saying  
 15:30 3 there is no credible scientific evidence linking  
 15:30 4 cigarette smoking to lung cancer before 1950 and  
 15:30 5 this is your 1930 to 1950, and all I'm asking you  
 15:30 6 is, therefore you are saying that in these 279  
 15:30 7 articles you are telling us there is no credible  
 15:30 8 evidence linking, linking cigarette smoking and  
 15:30 9 lung cancer.  
 15:30 10 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 15:31 11 A Well, I would say that qualitatively the essence  
 15:31 12 of what I have been saying is correct.  
 15:31 13 Q How about quantitatively?  
 15:31 14 A And close to quantitatively. If I were writing  
 15:31 15 this today I'm sure I would - I had this  
 15:31 16 discussion with Mr. Woods last night, I would put  
 15:31 17 little credible scientific evidence rather than no  
 15:31 18 credible scientific evidence. And actually as  
 15:31 19 part of my testimony as I said before, that  
 15:31 20 concern about this issue goes back awhile. But  
 15:31 21 data is needed and that is what was lacking, plus  
 15:31 22 ability is needed, that is what was lacking. It  
 15:31 23 is not just a question of Dr. Tylecote thinking  
 15:31 24 that writing a letter to Lancet do people believe  
 15:31 25 this. I agree with the phraseology of Dr. Doll.

15:31 1 As I said before he says that the suggestion that  
 15:31 2 cigarette smoking causes lung cancer goes back to  
 15:32 3 the twenties and thirties and forties. But it is  
 15:32 4 not until 1950 that a sufficient amount of good  
 15:32 5 scientific information is collected in a  
 15:32 6 responsible way that persuades more than a mere  
 15:32 7 handful of people to think that cigarette smoking  
 15:32 8 is the cause of lung cancer and other material  
 15:32 9 disease. I agree with Dr. Doll and that is my  
 15:32 10 testimony. I personally do not like the word no  
 15:32 11 in here because it leads to a sense of absolutism  
 15:32 12 which I'm really not trying to suggest. And I  
 15:32 13 would change it to little rather than no.  
 15:32 14 Q Page 3, the second sentence in that paragraph,  
 15:32 15 beginning --  
 15:32 16 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record  
 15:32 17 for a tape change. The time is 3:29 PM.  
 15:40 18 (Short recess was taken.)  
 15:40 19 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: We are back on the  
 15:40 20 record. The time is 3:36 PM.  
 15:40 21 A May I make a brief statement qualification? I  
 15:40 22 believe this was contained in the conversation we  
 15:40 23 had prior to the break, but just to make sure, I  
 15:40 24 would like to say on that paragraph, again  
 15:40 25 documents get sent to you, you read them quickly,

15:40 1 you sign them. If I were writing this today I  
 15:40 2 would not use the word no, I would use the word  
 15:41 3 little. And my main point is not to argue over no  
 15:41 4 versus little. My main point is remains the same,  
 15:41 5 to contrast the quantity and quality of scientific  
 15:41 6 evidence and the degree of concern evoked in the  
 15:41 7 rest of the scientific community before 1950 and  
 15:41 8 after 1950. 1950 is a watershed. That's really  
 15:41 9 the point that I'm making. Not to deny that there  
 15:41 10 were serious individuals who had genuine concerns  
 15:41 11 that smoking might cause lung cancer before 1950.  
 15:41 12 I don't want that wording to cause my main point  
 15:41 13 to be lost. I don't think it was, but I wanted to  
 15:41 14 make that clarification.  
 15:41 15 Q At the bottom of that same paragraph, the last  
 15:41 16 sentence says, "Rather the issue of whether  
 15:41 17 smoking caused disease was the subject of debate,  
 15:41 18 with reputable scientists on both sides." What  
 15:41 19 were the two sides?  
 15:42 20 A The issue was not the data that was being  
 15:42 21 accumulated from the epidemiological studies. The  
 15:42 22 issue was the interpretation of the data, whether  
 15:42 23 these new types of studies and the inferences that  
 15:42 24 could be drawn from them were sufficient to allow  
 15:42 25 conclusions about cause and effect to be made.

15:42 1 Everyone that I'm aware of was worried about the  
 15:42 2 data. I don't know of anyone who was cavalier  
 15:42 3 toward it in the scientific community. The  
 15:42 4 question was are these statistical associations or  
 15:42 5 is there a true cause and effect relationship  
 15:42 6 between cigarette smoking and lung cancer. It was  
 15:42 7 the interpretation of the data that generated most  
 15:42 8 of the discussion. Other studies of course were  
 15:42 9 being conducted, pathological studies and studies  
 15:42 10 of skin painting studies and constituents of smoke  
 15:42 11 and other things. But the lack of an animal  
 15:43 12 model, the lack of an experimental model, the  
 15:43 13 lack of the ability to show in the traditional  
 15:43 14 fashion that cigarette smoking causes lung cancer  
 15:43 15 the same way that if you give someone measles who  
 15:43 16 hasn't had it they are going to contract measles,  
 15:43 17 and you are contracting them by coax postulates,  
 15:43 18 those traditional standards hadn't been met. That  
 15:43 19 was really the nature of the debate. Given what  
 15:43 20 conclusions we can draw from these new  
 15:43 21 epidemiological studies, by "new" I mean chronic  
 15:43 22 diseases. Epidemiology is do we have a  
 15:43 23 statistical association or do we have true cause  
 15:43 24 and effect.  
 15:43 25 Q Were there just two sides to that debate then or

15:43 1 were there three, that with one group saying  
 15:43 2 smoking causes disease, the other group you call  
 15:44 3 them here both sides, saying smoking does not  
 15:44 4 cause disease, and a third group saying we don't  
 15:44 5 know yet whether smoking causes disease or not?  
 15:44 6 A Actually it depends on kind of how deep into the  
 15:44 7 story you want to go. But if one wants to get  
 15:44 8 subtle, there were groups, there were various sub  
 15:44 9 groups. There were some people and some people  
 15:44 10 became convinced early on, by early on, early mid  
 15:44 11 fifties, that cigarette smoking caused lung  
 15:44 12 cancer. There are others who said we are worried  
 15:44 13 but we really don't know. There were others who  
 15:44 14 said that, as you are saying now, that we can draw  
 15:44 15 -- we are worried but in the absence of an animal  
 15:44 16 model or traditional postulates of causation being  
 15:44 17 shown we are unable to draw that conclusion.  
 15:45 18 It actually gets more complex still because  
 15:45 19 even particularly -- now again let me make an  
 15:45 20 aside. We are talking about a rapid dynamic here  
 15:45 21 from skepticism in 1950 to a new consensus by  
 15:45 22 1964, the creation of the new field, the  
 15:45 23 epidemiology of chronic diseases. From a  
 15:45 24 historical perspective a lot happened quickly.  
 15:45 25 And year by year the tone changes and new studies

15:45 1 come out. So what you say about 1952 is not the
15:45 2 same as '55 or '58 or '61. So all of these
15:45 3 qualifications have to be put into it. But
15:45 4 particularly in the fifties, less so in the
15:45 5 sixties, but particularly in the fifties you have
15:45 6 other levels of debate, much of which had to do
15:45 7 with debates among the epidemiologists themselves,
15:46 8 not over just over the issue of whether cigarette
15:46 9 smoking caused lung cancer, but how strong a cause
15:46 10 it was. Was it a major problem or a minor problem
15:46 11 relative to pollution or environmental exposure or
15:46 12 something of this sort.

15:46 13 There was some epidemiologists, the majority
15:46 14 of epidemiologists were saying that cigarette
15:46 15 smoking causes lung cancer and it is a major cause
15:46 16 and they of course were at the front of the
15:46 17 bandwagon. But there were epidemiologists who
15:46 18 were saying, "I think cigarette smoking
15:46 19 contributes to lung cancer but it is a minor cause
15:46 20 relative to occupational exposure or pollution or
15:46 21 that sort of thing. From the early and mid
15:46 22 fifties you have additional levels of debates that
15:46 23 are going on. So it is more complex if you pursue
15:46 24 it.

15:46 25 Q Do we have a group, maybe we don't, that says

15:46 1 smoking does not cause cancer, lung cancer?

15:46 2 MR. WOODS: objection.

15:47 3 A Who are you talking about?

15:47 4 Q Well here I think in your statement here I think
15:47 5 you are talking about between 1950 and 1964, and
15:47 6 you talk about a consensus within the medical and
15:47 7 scientific community, and then you say that there
15:47 8 is reputable scientists on both sides. So we have
15:47 9 talked about those reputable scientists on the
15:47 10 side that say cigarette smoking does cause lung
15:47 11 cancer, then you talked about the reputable
15:47 12 scientists who say it may, but you don't have the
15:47 13 proof so we are not going to say one way or the
15:47 14 other. I'm asking, is there another group of
15:47 15 reputable scientists between '50 and '64 who are
15:47 16 saying doesn't cause it?

15:47 17 A If there are, Ms. Moltzen, I don't know of any.
15:47 18 The debate had to do with what conclusions could
15:47 19 be drawn from the epidemiological studies, what
15:47 20 inferences were justifiable. I don't know of any
15:48 21 responsible scientists who were saying that
15:48 22 cigarette smoking is safe. I don't know of any
15:48 23 responsible scientists of this period who were
15:48 24 saying that I'm not worried. Everyone I know of
15:48 25 is saying, "Hey, we have got something to worry

15:48 1 about." The question was do these new standards
15:48 2 prove it or in fact is this a false correlation
15:48 3 and smoking is not guilty of the charges that have
15:48 4 been put to it. I think they would phrase it like
15:48 5 that. I don't know of individuals who are saying
15:48 6 the whole subject is baloney, cigarette smoking is
15:48 7 safe. I'm sure you can find people on the
15:48 8 fringes, but I'm unaware of that view that
15:48 9 responsible scientific community. It was more
15:48 10 over is the statistical association merely that or
15:48 11 are we able to conclude cause and effect. That is
15:48 12 a more accurate representation.

15:49 13 Q The Surgeon General made a statement in here that
15:49 14 I was going to ask you about. It is on Page 32 of
15:49 15 his report.

15:49 16 A I think that's right here.

15:49 17 Q It is. It is under cardiovascular disease, the
15:49 18 very top section. We are not talking about lung
15:49 19 cancer here but it is more a statement of -- what
15:49 20 he says here is the committee -- goes down to
15:49 21 about the fourth line, "The committee considers it
15:49 22 more prudent from the public health viewpoint to
15:49 23 assume that the established association has
15:49 24 causative meaning than to suspend judgment until
15:49 25 no uncertainty remains." Do you believe that

15:49 1 that, from a public health viewpoint, that that is
15:49 2 a prudent way to look at the evidence that was out
15:50 3 there between '50 and '64?

15:50 4 A If you are talking about cardiovascular disease as
15:50 5 indeed they are talking about, I agree with that
15:50 6 statement, believe it is a responsible statement.
15:50 7 Medicine differs from science because as a
15:50 8 physician or as a public health advocate you don't
15:50 9 not have the luxury of waiting for all of that
15:50 10 information. You have someone who is sick who is
15:50 11 in front of you now and you have to make a
15:50 12 decision. You may not know if this drug or that
15:50 13 drug is the best or if you need any drug at all,
15:50 14 but the patient is ill, is suffering, you don't
15:50 15 have time to wait. So there are differences in
15:50 16 the practice of medicine from science where you go
15:50 17 off and you do an experiment, you wait for the
15:50 18 data to come in.

15:50 19 And similarly, in public health, there may be
15:51 20 sufficient worry where it may be prudent to make a
15:51 21 recommendation rather than wade through all of the
15:51 22 data. That's precisely the situation that
15:51 23 occurred with coronary artery disease. It was
15:51 24 ironic because the prospective studies as you know
15:51 25 showed that cigarette smoking was related to or in

15:51 1 some cases causally with a range of disease, not  
 15:51 2 just lung cancer. The whole thing began with lung  
 15:51 3 cancer. One of the surprises that occurred and  
 15:51 4 people were surprised is the range of illnesses  
 15:51 5 that are being associated with it. Now, some of  
 15:51 6 the associations were very loose statistically and  
 15:51 7 had other biological explanations. An excellent  
 15:51 8 one in the Surgeon General's report is liver  
 15:51 9 disease because so many people drink and smoke.  
 15:52 10 So statistical association, the small statistical  
 15:52 11 association they saw had other explanations.  
 15:52 12 Coronary artery disease posed a real problem  
 15:52 13 because the toll on the nation's health that  
 15:52 14 appeared to be the result from coronary artery  
 15:52 15 disease was much more than for lung cancer.  
 15:52 16 They began to study lung cancer, they are  
 15:52 17 finding all this morbidity and mortality from  
 15:52 18 coronary artery disease. The problem was the  
 15:52 19 specificity was not as great. The chances of  
 15:52 20 developing coronary artery disease, if I recall  
 15:52 21 correctly, were about, it was 1.7 to 1, the  
 15:52 22 nonsmoker versus the smoker for coronary artery  
 15:52 23 disease versus 10 to 20 to 1 for lung cancer. The  
 15:53 24 specificity was not as high. There are other  
 15:53 25 factors that we were linking played a role in

15:54 1 of the evidence, and the amount and power of the  
 15:54 2 evidence was growing year by year. There was much  
 15:54 3 more evidence in 1957 than in '53 or '54. There  
 15:54 4 was more evidence in '62 than in '57. One has to  
 15:54 5 be, in my judgment, very specific. At some point  
 15:55 6 public health officials or physicians will make  
 15:55 7 recommendations in a state of uncertainty. But  
 15:55 8 you have to have enough evidence to justify that.  
 15:55 9 Then the second point to bring out is just  
 15:55 10 how fragile this whole area of public health  
 15:55 11 recommendations is because should you have a  
 15:55 12 mammogram or not, should you have hormonal  
 15:55 13 supplement. All of these things are coming out.  
 15:55 14 You have epidemiological data suggesting one form  
 15:55 15 of behavior, then they are contradicted by  
 15:55 16 another. Just extraordinary confusion among the  
 15:55 17 public and among the medical profession, the  
 15:55 18 public health officials what to do. Add on to the  
 15:55 19 fact that you are not -- you are talking about  
 15:55 20 people's lives and life styles. There are  
 15:55 21 economic implications with certain things. To  
 15:55 22 change recommendations frequently you can do ill  
 15:55 23 by having a recommendation or changing it as well  
 15:56 24 as do good. It is a very difficult issue in my  
 15:56 25 judgment in that the whole public health field and

15:53 1 coronary artery disease, lipid levels, things of  
 15:53 2 that sort.  
 15:53 3 On the other hand, if you just calculate the  
 15:53 4 number of smokers who had coronary artery disease,  
 15:53 5 it was several fold the number who developed lung  
 15:53 6 cancer and that was a very disturbing finding and  
 15:53 7 that led to the wording that you were pointing out  
 15:53 8 over here and in my opinion that was very  
 15:53 9 responsible.  
 15:53 10 Q Is that a responsible attitude, if we get away  
 15:53 11 from coronary heart disease, let's talk about  
 15:53 12 another chronic disease where there are some  
 15:53 13 established associations, maybe lung cancer in the  
 15:53 14 fifties. Is it still responsible to say that it  
 15:53 15 is more prudent from the public health viewpoint  
 15:53 16 to assume that the established association has  
 15:53 17 causative meaning than to suspend judgment until  
 15:53 18 no uncertainty remains?  
 15:54 19 A I'm not an expert in public health and in  
 15:54 20 recommendations and degree of certainty that is  
 15:54 21 needed so I'm really not the proper person to give  
 15:54 22 an expert response, but I'm not trying to avoid it  
 15:54 23 either. And I would say a couple of things. One,  
 15:54 24 is that the degree to which you decide to act  
 15:54 25 prudently is going to reflect the amount and power

15:56 1 recommendations that we give the public. But  
 15:56 2 again, I'm speaking as a reasonably well-informed  
 15:56 3 citizen, not as an expert in public health and  
 15:56 4 what recommendations to give.  
 15:56 5 Q In that same paragraph you use the word "debate."  
 15:56 6 Rather the issue of whether smoking caused  
 15:56 7 disease --  
 15:56 8 A Which paragraph are you in?  
 15:56 9 Q We are --  
 15:56 10 A Are we still on cardiovascular diseases?  
 15:56 11 Q Let's go back to your expert report.  
 15:56 12 A My expert report.  
 15:56 13 Q Page 3, paragraph starting -- the first paragraph.  
 15:56 14 You talk in there about, the last sentence,  
 15:57 15 "Rather the issue of whether smoking caused  
 15:57 16 disease was the subject of debate with reputable  
 15:57 17 scientists on both sides."  
 15:57 18 Do you have any opinion on whether the  
 15:57 19 tobacco industry shaped that debate by using its  
 15:57 20 financial and public relations resources?  
 15:57 21 A I have no information to that effect. Candidly I  
 15:57 22 would be surprised, just knowing how independent  
 15:57 23 scientists are, knowing how many of the people of  
 15:57 24 smokers who themselves at the start of the study  
 15:57 25 then stopped smoking when they analyzed their own

Page 202

15:57 1 data, knowing that the worse thing that can happen  
 15:57 2 to a scientist is to be shown to be acting in some  
 15:58 3 sort of fraudulent or biased way. We all have our  
 15:58 4 biases, but it is one thing to have a point of  
 15:58 5 view, it is another thing to fabricate data, to  
 15:58 6 invent data, to suppress data. Scientists are  
 15:58 7 awfully independent people. We know that people  
 15:58 8 like Dr. Wynder and Dr. Graham and Dr. Doll and  
 15:58 9 Hill and Hammond are a very independent group. So  
 15:58 10 I have no direct information on that, but I would  
 15:58 11 be surprised. I'm always open to learn new  
 15:58 12 things, but I would be surprised.

15:58 13 **Q At Page 3, the first paragraph, and it starts with**  
 15:58 14 **the fourth line down, "At no time between 1950 and**  
 15:58 15 **January, 1964 -- when the Surgeon General's**  
 15:59 16 **advisory committee report was released -- was**  
 15:59 17 **there a consensus within the medical and**  
 15:59 18 **scientific community that cigarette smoking caused**  
 15:59 19 **lung cancer, heart disease, or other**  
 15:59 20 **life-threatening diseases."**

15:59 21 **Who makes up the medical and scientific**  
 15:59 22 **community in the United States?**

15:59 23 **A** Well, in general all those who are qualified  
 15:59 24 investigators you are talking about. Medical  
 15:59 25 school faculty, people at teaching hospitals, you

Page 203

15:59 1 are talking about in some cases people who might  
 15:59 2 be private companies, pharmaceutical companies,  
 15:59 3 for example, you are talking about private as well  
 15:59 4 as public research organizations, major private  
 15:59 5 cancer research organizations, for example being  
 15:59 6 Memorial Sloan-Kettering, publicly the National  
 15:59 7 Cancer Institute. You take the whole thing  
 16:00 8 together. The faculty and the people who are  
 16:00 9 doing research and the post-doctoral fellows and  
 16:00 10 so forth. It is a loose definition. So I would  
 16:00 11 be inclusive, not exclusive.

16:00 12 **Q What do you mean by the term "consensus"?**

16:00 13 **A** I'm glad you ask that. Because basically I mean  
 16:00 14 textbook teaching where you have individuals of  
 16:00 15 divergent backgrounds and perspectives and  
 16:00 16 temperaments and intellectual perspectives all of  
 16:00 17 who agree; textbook teaching, where you have --  
 16:00 18 where there is no debate, no serious debate on the  
 16:00 19 particular issue, where it becomes textbook  
 16:00 20 teaching, conventional. And again, I want to  
 16:00 21 stress among individuals from all perspectives and  
 16:00 22 traditions, not just a consensus within that,  
 16:00 23 epidemiologists, for example, but being able to  
 16:01 24 persuade the laboratory workers that their science  
 16:01 25 is a valid one; that type of thing.

Page 204

16:01 1 **Q** In December, 1963, was it textbook teaching that  
 16:01 2 cigarette smoking caused lung cancer, heart  
 16:01 3 disease and other life-threatening diseases?  
 16:01 4 **A** As I said before, this is certainly one of the  
 16:01 5 most intensely investigated issues in all of  
 16:01 6 bio-medicine. An enormous amount of information  
 16:01 7 is coming out, new analytical techniques are  
 16:01 8 coming out, new ways to analyze the data are  
 16:01 9 coming out. Epidemiology of chronic disease is  
 16:01 10 growing as a field and it could do statistical  
 16:02 11 calculations, for example, in 1959 that it could  
 16:02 12 not in '56 or '52. Year by year things are  
 16:02 13 changing.

16:02 14 What I would say if you are talking December,  
 16:02 15 1963, is that you got a near consensus. If you  
 16:02 16 compare the overall sentiment in 1963 within the  
 16:02 17 medical community that cigarette smoking causes  
 16:02 18 lung cancer, it is stronger than it was even a few  
 16:02 19 years ago, even a few years before that. The  
 16:02 20 Surgeon General, by the way, points out how even  
 16:02 21 from 1959 to the appearance of the report there  
 16:02 22 was a decided change in sentiment within the  
 16:02 23 scientific community. So it is not people lined  
 16:02 24 up evenly in one side. You have a growing  
 16:02 25 consensus that starts with 1950 and each year

Page 205

16:02 1 becomes stronger. If you are looking at December,  
 16:03 2 1963, most people are on board.

16:03 3 What I have discovered in my research acting  
 16:03 4 as a responsible historian, looking at all of the  
 16:03 5 information, is that you have pockets of  
 16:03 6 responsible disagreement even through 1963,  
 16:03 7 disagreement that later went away, and that's why  
 16:03 8 I would not say you had a consensus in 1963. I  
 16:03 9 think the most important disagreement came from  
 16:03 10 laboratory scientists who were troubled by the  
 16:03 11 ambiguity of the experimental evidence and  
 16:03 12 inability to have an animal model. The most vocal  
 16:03 13 such groups came from the most -- some of the most  
 16:03 14 important places in American and world wide  
 16:03 15 medicine. In particular the National Cancer  
 16:03 16 Institute and Memorial Sloan-Kettering. Those  
 16:03 17 were not people on tobacco company's payroll.  
 16:03 18 Those were people who had a different world view.  
 16:04 19 Even in '61, '62, is '63, laboratory workers from  
 16:04 20 those institutions were publishing paper were  
 16:04 21 worried, but in the absence of biological data we  
 16:04 22 are unwilling to conclude that there is a causal  
 16:04 23 relationship. Then some of the statistical  
 16:04 24 criticisms of Dr. Fisher and Berkson were still  
 16:04 25 unanswered. So those were the main pockets of

1 doubt.

16:06 1 sense, the only thing wrong with these criticisms  
 16:06 2 is that scientific fact ultimately showed that  
 16:06 3 they were on the wrong side, but the logic and the  
 16:06 4 power is very powerful even today. The author  
 16:06 5 says in this paper, "If I had been there in the  
 16:06 6 late fifties and early sixties and read Dr.  
 16:06 7 Berkson's papers I'm not sure what side of the  
 16:06 8 debate I would have come down on." And finally I  
 16:06 9 think it is important regarding Dr. Berkson that  
 16:06 10 the Surgeon General's report itself addressed his  
 16:06 11 objections. I believe that is extraordinarily  
 16:06 12 important both to the legitimacy of Dr. Berkson as  
 16:06 13 an individual as well as in answering residual  
 16:06 14 doubts, creating a consensus and so forth. But  
 16:06 15 the Surgeon General addressed his criticisms.  
 16:07 16 Essentially the report said Dr. Berkson is right  
 16:07 17 in his criticisms. There are certain biases in  
 16:07 18 these studies and analyses that are there, but the  
 16:07 19 magnitude is much less than he claims. So even  
 16:07 20 with these biases, the conclusion that cigarette  
 16:07 21 smoking causes lung cancer we believe is a valid  
 16:07 22 conclusion. The fact that the Surgeon General  
 16:07 23 report addresses Dr. Berkson on those criticism in  
 16:07 24 my opinion is evidence that he was a serious man  
 16:07 25 taken seriously by his contemporaries.

16:04 2 Now this is much different from 1962, '61,  
 16:04 3 '60. Each year you have the growing consensus.  
 16:04 4 But in my judgment it took the Surgeon General's  
 16:04 5 report to really clench things, to persuade the  
 16:04 6 remaining residue of laboratory workers that this  
 16:04 7 method of analysis was valid and so forth. That's  
 16:04 8 why I considered it such an important document.  
 16:04 9 Q Wasn't Berkson's opinion pretty marginal?  
 16:04 10 A I would disagree with that. That's an incorrect  
 16:04 11 statement. Number 1, Berkson was considered to be  
 16:05 12 the most important biostatistician in the United  
 16:05 13 States, so he was very highly regarded at the  
 16:05 14 time. Number 2, if you read his objections you  
 16:05 15 find that there is a great, in my opinion, a great  
 16:05 16 deal of credibility to them, if you actually read  
 16:05 17 them.  
 16:05 18 One of the most important articles for me in  
 16:05 19 formulating my views was an article entitled  
 16:05 20 "Those Who Were Wrong." And I forget the author  
 16:05 21 of the article, but it would be in the  
 16:06 22 bibliography. It this an eminent epidemiologist  
 16:06 23 who actually went back and read the statistical  
 16:06 24 criticisms of Dr. Berkson and said, "You know,  
 16:06 25 they really" -- and Dr. Fisher, they really make

16:07 1 Q Do you know if Dr. Berkson, if any of his research  
 16:07 2 was funded by the tobacco industry?  
 16:07 3 A I have no information on that one way or the  
 16:07 4 other. But I don't think it would make any  
 16:07 5 difference to me if it were.  
 16:08 6 (Deposition Exhibit No. 14 was marked  
 16:08 7 for identification.)  
 16:08 8 Q I'm going to hand you what has been marked as  
 16:08 9 Ludmerer Deposition Exhibit 14. It is a report by  
 16:08 10 BAT Co Scientists, visit to United States and  
 16:08 11 Canada, in April and May of 1958. And the Bates  
 16:08 12 number is 105408490 to 8499. And the second page  
 16:08 13 lists many of the places that they visited  
 16:08 14 including medical schools, also tobacco companies.  
 16:08 15 On the third page, which is headed up Page 2,  
 16:09 16 there is an introduction, and then the second  
 16:09 17 section is called "Causation of lung cancer."  
 16:09 18 These BAT Co scientists say, "With one exception,  
 16:09 19 (H.S.N. Greenc,) G-R-E-E-N-E, the individuals whom  
 16:09 20 we met believed that smoking causes lung cancer.  
 16:09 21 If by "causation" we mean any chain of events  
 16:09 22 which leads finally to lung cancer and which  
 16:09 23 involves smoking as an indispensable link. In the  
 16:09 24 United States only Berkson, apparently, is now  
 16:09 25 prepared to doubt the statistical evidence and his

Page 209

16:09 1 reasoning is nowhere thought to be sound."  
 16:09 2 Do you disagree with their opinion of Dr.  
 16:09 3 Berkson?  
 16:09 4 A Yes, I do, very much. I have actually seen this  
 16:09 5 document before because in a previous deposition  
 16:10 6 it has been presented to me. And aside from the  
 16:10 7 usual qualifications that a responsible historian  
 16:10 8 would have about any document, who wrote it and  
 16:10 9 what were the circumstances and who was it for and  
 16:10 10 how was it received and what were the reactions to  
 16:10 11 it and that whole litany of things that you see  
 16:10 12 about documents. The fact is that though that  
 16:10 13 statement is there, it is an incorrect statement.  
 16:10 14 It is wrong. Dr. Berkson was the leading medical  
 16:10 15 statistician in this country. He was widely  
 16:10 16 recognized around the world for his contributions.  
 16:10 17 As I indicated before, he was so notable that  
 16:10 18 there is a section in the Surgeon General's report  
 16:10 19 that specifically addresses objections that he  
 16:10 20 raised and they said, "You are right, it is just  
 16:10 21 that the magnitude doesn't change the results." I  
 16:11 22 have seen no one refer to Dr. Berkson  
 16:11 23 disparagingly other than in this document and I  
 16:11 24 would disagree with their characterization of him.  
 16:11 25 Q Is it possible to take the word "consensus" and

Page 211

16:13 1 certain percentage of the popular vote.  
 16:13 2 Now I would say two additional things. You  
 16:13 3 got to have an awfully high percentage. You are  
 16:13 4 not talking 70/30, 80/20. You are talking  
 16:13 5 virtually everyone. But there are qualitative  
 16:13 6 aspects that help one recognize a consensus. Do  
 16:13 7 you have ongoing debate or does the debate end.  
 16:13 8 Are people who continue to advocate a certain  
 16:13 9 view, is that a mainstream view or have they  
 16:13 10 become marginalized. There are qualitative  
 16:14 11 aspects to that. And also it is very important to  
 16:14 12 keep in mind, particularly when you are in the  
 16:14 13 70/30, 80/20, 90/10, this is how we are going from  
 16:14 14 the early fifties to mid fifties to late fifties  
 16:14 15 to early sixties, each year the number grows. You  
 16:14 16 also have to look at who is on your team. It is  
 16:14 17 not numbers alone but it is the intellectual  
 16:14 18 stature of the person, of the people who are  
 16:14 19 speaking. If any one of us were to have Michael  
 16:14 20 Jordan as a partner I will bet that team of two  
 16:14 21 would beat the rest of us combined in basketball.  
 16:14 22 And I think that is one reason that these,  
 16:14 23 what I'm calling residual doubt amidst a growing  
 16:14 24 majority and emerging consensus was a real one in  
 16:15 25 the early sixties. Who did it come from? No one

Page 210

16:11 1 turn it into numbers so that you could say after  
 16:11 2 January, 1964 a majority of the scientific and  
 16:11 3 medical community -- medical community agreed that  
 16:11 4 cigarette smoking causes cancer, heart disease or  
 16:12 5 other life-threatening diseases?  
 16:12 6 A Could you please repeat that? Probably the day  
 16:12 7 but there is something --  
 16:12 8 Q I'm trying to understand if I can put the word  
 16:12 9 "consensus," which you have described in very  
 16:12 10 conceptual terms, into numbers so that if we lined  
 16:12 11 up the scientific and medical community and we  
 16:12 12 said only 49 percent of them believed there was  
 16:12 13 a -- believed that there was a connection, that is  
 16:12 14 not a consensus. How big quantitatively do you  
 16:12 15 have to get before you get a consensus?  
 16:12 16 A I'm speaking personally on that because  
 16:12 17 philosophers and historians can debate these  
 16:12 18 issues and they get theoretical. But I think from  
 16:12 19 a pragmatic standpoint, it is a judgment call.  
 16:12 20 Like anything in history, like anything in  
 16:12 21 science, just as the Surgeon General acknowledges  
 16:12 22 that conclusions about causation ultimately are  
 16:13 23 judgment calls and science and scholarships and  
 16:13 24 history are making judgment calls, and I think it  
 16:13 25 would be an error to try to equate it with a

Page 212

16:15 1 was intellectually more important in these debates  
 16:15 2 than Ronald Fisher, who is the greatest scientific  
 16:15 3 mind of all and whose work was the basis of  
 16:15 4 epidemiology of chronic diseases. The fact that  
 16:15 5 Fisher and other biostatisticians continued to  
 16:15 6 express their reservations was important beyond  
 16:15 7 numbers. It is like giving me Michael Jordan on  
 16:15 8 my team. Fisher was one of the dominant  
 16:15 9 biologists of the 20th century. The fact that the  
 16:15 10 leading laboratory workers at the National Cancer  
 16:15 11 Institute and NIH did not yet accept the new  
 16:15 12 paradigm that you can accept -- that you can make  
 16:15 13 causal inferences from epidemiological studies.  
 16:15 14 The quality of some of this group of residual  
 16:15 15 doubters counted as well. So it is not numbers  
 16:15 16 alone. And you find -- if you pick and choose  
 16:16 17 selectively and just tell the story of one  
 16:16 18 discovery leading to another and the growing  
 16:16 19 consensus, you get one view. If you look at the  
 16:16 20 literature exhaustively and comprehensively as I  
 16:16 21 do, you essentially get the same picture, but you  
 16:16 22 also realize that not everyone went along yet with  
 16:16 23 the growing consensus, and these were leading  
 16:16 24 responsible people that was legitimate and it took  
 16:16 25 the Surgeon General's report to get everyone on

16:16 1 board.

16:16 2 Q Has the debate ended today?

16:16 3 MR. WOODS: Objection.

16:16 4 A Which debate?

16:16 5 Q You said one of the things you have to look at

16:16 6 when you are deciding about consensus is the

16:16 7 quality of the people; and did the debate end?

16:16 8 A I think the evidence clearly points to the

16:17 9 appearance of the 1964 Surgeon General's report

16:17 10 and an extraordinary intellectual contribution

16:17 11 that it made as we talked about before, the five

16:17 12 criteria and how one uses this information. Not

16:17 13 the information per se, but how you use it and

16:17 14 draw inferences and conclusions from it. I think,

16:17 15 Number 1, it is accurate to say that our current

16:17 16 consensus, that cigarette smoking causes lung

16:17 17 cancer, emerges from that. Number 2, I haven't

16:17 18 studied things since 1964, but I do know that the

16:17 19 epidemiology of chronic disease emerges a new

16:17 20 discipline from this debate and has become an

16:17 21 important part of biomedicine. Even if you are a

16:18 22 laboratory worker today, you recognize that there

16:18 23 is an alternative mode of showing causation

16:18 24 besides demonstrating it in an experimental way

16:18 25 which laboratory workers of the fifties and

16:19 1 want to know what you mean about that term. Give

16:20 2 me -- what is aftermath? What are we talking

16:20 3 about?

16:20 4 A I appreciate your asking it. I appreciate the

16:20 5 tenor of the conversation we have been having all

16:20 6 day long where we can discuss things. It is very

16:20 7 possible if I were writing this today I might use

16:20 8 slightly different words. Let me just explain my

16:20 9 views to you which is really what you need.

16:20 10 Number 1, I maintain that our current consensus

16:20 11 that cigarette smoking causes lung disease and

16:20 12 other diseases as well, that the final step in the

16:20 13 process that gave that consensus was the 1964

16:20 14 Surgeon General's report. It didn't come out of

16:20 15 the blue. There is a growing consensus year by

16:20 16 year.

16:20 17 But this consensus, this lack of debate, this

16:20 18 acceptance even by laboratory scientists, you know

16:21 19 that is, Surgeon General is right, there are other

16:21 20 ways to prove causation, that dates the '64

16:21 21 Surgeon General's report we have inherited since

16:21 22 then. That is the first and most important point

16:21 23 that I'm making.

16:21 24 The second point that I wish to make in this,

16:21 25 and this is where things get tricky because

16:18 1 sixties had to learn to accept. So I don't know

16:18 2 of anyone today, if you are talking 2002, who

16:18 3 would say that this is not an alternative

16:18 4 paradigm.

16:18 5 Now, you can find responsible scientists, we

16:18 6 got them in my own university, who will tell their

16:18 7 patients not to smoke, who will talk about the

16:18 8 hazards of cigarette smoking and both the personal

16:18 9 and public health menace it is. When they get

16:18 10 with their laboratory groups in seminars and say

16:18 11 and we still have holes in the biological

16:18 12 evidence, we need more work. But that's a

16:18 13 different sort of thing. They accept the

16:18 14 epidemiological data. I certainly accept it.

16:19 15 Q I believe the statement you use eventually in here

16:19 16 is in the aftermath. I apologize if I'm quoting

16:19 17 that wrong, but --

16:19 18 A You are probably quoting it correctly.

16:19 19 Q I want to know but -- I got it now, Page 6 of your

16:19 20 report. The sentence, it is the second paragraph,

16:19 21 "In 1964 the advisory committee." If we go down

16:19 22 to the seventh line there is a sentence in there

16:19 23 that starts, "Even though a consensus about

16:19 24 causation developed in the aftermath of the 1964

16:19 25 report." I don't mean to be nitpicky, I really

16:21 1 history is messy and untidy and also it is hard to

16:21 2 say things in a seven page report. This has very

16:21 3 much to do with the issue of scientific

16:21 4 revolutions and paradigms.

16:21 5 In my opinion the most important contribution

16:21 6 of the Surgeon General's report, '64, great

16:21 7 document that that is, is not merely in

16:21 8 demonstrating that cigarette smoking causes lung

16:21 9 disease and other diseases as well, but in

16:22 10 bringing about the maturation of a new field and

16:22 11 acceptance of this new field by the rest of the

16:22 12 biomedical community, epidemiology of chronic

16:22 13 diseases, because these same techniques have now

16:22 14 been used to study many other problems as well and

16:22 15 have become an important part of medical research.

16:22 16 In my opinion that general contribution is even

16:22 17 greater than the specific observation that

16:22 18 cigarette smoking causes lung cancer, as important

16:22 19 as that is. This gets us back to context, this

16:22 20 gets us back to how historians think about

16:22 21 problems, this gets us back to scientific

16:22 22 revolutions. Is everyone going to change their

16:22 23 mind immediately? And the answer is probably not.

16:22 24 People who have studied scientific revolutions,

16:22 25 again we go back to my paradigm bibliography, have

Page 217

16:22 1 pointed out that when you have one world view  
 16:23 2 arising to challenge or replace another,  
 16:23 3 ultimately it is less that residual doubters are  
 16:23 4 persuaded, it is that they die off or retire.  
 16:23 5 There is that element to it.  
 16:23 6 Consider someone who is 50 years old in 1950,  
 16:23 7 an eminent laboratory worker at the top of his  
 16:23 8 field, internationally renown, who has been  
 16:23 9 brought up with the old paradigm that you need  
 16:23 10 laboratory confirmation, who has heard all of the  
 16:23 11 arguments. Such an individual who in December,  
 16:23 12 '63, may not have bought into clinical  
 16:23 13 epidemiology, might not in '64, he is set in his  
 16:23 14 ways. Is such a person irresponsible?  
 16:23 15 What I'm really trying to say there, and  
 16:24 16 can't do it very well in the short number of  
 16:24 17 pages, is that if you were looking at doubters,  
 16:24 18 you have to look at who they were, when they spoke  
 16:24 19 and how they framed it. For example, the best  
 16:24 20 example that I know of is Dr. Brownlee from the  
 16:24 21 University of Chicago. By coincidence I  
 16:24 22 discovered his review of the Surgeon General's  
 16:24 23 report that was published in 1965 in the Journal  
 16:24 24 of American Statistical Association. This is a  
 16:24 25 statistician speaking, not a laboratory person.

Page 218

16:24 1 And he was critical of the report basically  
 16:24 2 because he felt that for all of the information  
 16:24 3 that has been assembled without direct biological  
 16:24 4 confirmation you cannot draw conclusions about  
 16:24 5 causality. Now this is 1965. It is not 2002.  
 16:24 6 He was very cautious in his wording. He was  
 16:24 7 acknowledging that he was worried about the  
 16:25 8 evidence, he was not saying that cigarette smoking  
 16:25 9 is safe, but he is saying by traditional canons  
 16:25 10 the case has not been proved. Scientists are  
 16:25 11 independent.  
 16:25 12 I know the Surgeon General came up with these  
 16:25 13 new criteria and people are trying to say there  
 16:25 14 are ways to prove things without direct biological  
 16:25 15 experimental confirmation. I just don't go along  
 16:25 16 with that. And I'm unwilling to say that a person  
 16:25 17 like that is acting irresponsibly. That is really  
 16:25 18 what I'm saying. Even though I would also say you  
 16:25 19 got the consensus. Most people jumped on board.  
 16:25 20 The laboratory workers who in the sixties were  
 16:25 21 saying you can't do it epidemiologically, they  
 16:25 22 quieted down, it enters the textbooks. I'm making  
 16:25 23 that qualification that for the Brownlee type of  
 16:25 24 person.  
 16:25 25 Q For the people who do decide to jump aboard

Page 219

16:25 1 though, I'm Midwestern through and through, very  
 16:26 2 practical, born and bred in Minnesota, so it just  
 16:26 3 seems to me that just because I get the Surgeon  
 16:26 4 General's report in the mail, when you use  
 16:26 5 aftermath, you do not necessarily mean within the  
 16:26 6 next couple of days I go eureka and suddenly the  
 16:26 7 consensus has -- there is a total consensus?  
 16:26 8 A That's correct. Aftermath is hard to quantify in  
 16:26 9 a precise way and here I'm relying on secondary  
 16:26 10 reading that I have done rather than primary  
 16:26 11 reading. But we are talking weeks, months,  
 16:26 12 someone may be on vacation when the Surgeon  
 16:26 13 General's report comes out. As I discussed before  
 16:26 14 in response to one of your questions, a lot of  
 16:26 15 consensus building or consensus deconstruction  
 16:26 16 occurs not from the paper itself but the informal  
 16:26 17 conversations, opinions of -- opinion makers, Dr.  
 16:26 18 Smith the Surgeon General's report came out, do  
 16:27 19 you really believe it, do you buy into it. I do.  
 16:27 20 Then the students or the other people say I might  
 16:27 21 as well. We are talking about a process that on  
 16:27 22 the one hand did not occur the next day  
 16:27 23 immediately but nonetheless move relatively  
 16:27 24 quickly.  
 16:27 25 You find epidemiology being accepted as a

Page 220

16:27 1 discipline in medical schools, and departments  
 16:27 2 being created and textbooks being written and new  
 16:27 3 organizations being formed and a lot of evidence  
 16:27 4 of this sort of the acceptance of a field. You  
 16:27 5 find that the published articles that would  
 16:27 6 dispute the causation hypothesis that you find  
 16:27 7 from reputable people even in the '61, '62, '63,  
 16:27 8 they stop appearing, I think that's notable. So  
 16:27 9 it is hard --  
 16:27 10 I think you are exactly right that it is hard  
 16:27 11 to give a precise time frame to it. We are  
 16:27 12 talking something pretty quickly. Of course as  
 16:27 13 you know better than I, the report led to the  
 16:27 14 legislation requiring warning labels. A lot of  
 16:28 15 things happening suggesting that things had  
 16:28 16 changed. Epidemiologists who lived through the  
 16:28 17 period talk about how even by the mid sixties the  
 16:28 18 field of epidemiology was much more secure than it  
 16:28 19 had been even a few years before. One can go on  
 16:28 20 and on with these sorts of examples. But it was  
 16:28 21 pretty quick.  
 16:28 22 Q Do you have an opinion on when there was a  
 16:28 23 consensus within the medical and scientific  
 16:28 24 community that cigarette smoking was linked to  
 16:28 25 coronary heart disease?

16:28 1 A I believe from secondary sources that the Surgeon  
 16:28 2 General's report was accepted as a whole so that  
 16:29 3 it drew causal conclusions about cigarette smoking  
 16:29 4 and bronchitis, as far as I'm aware from secondary  
 16:29 5 sources, as well as personal experience in medical  
 16:29 6 school, I'm just recalling anecdotally that was  
 16:29 7 accepted that the concerns of coronary artery  
 16:29 8 disease were real, so forth. I'm unaware of  
 16:29 9 anyone -- I'm not saying it didn't happen, I'm  
 16:29 10 just saying I'm unaware of someone saying I accept  
 16:29 11 this conclusion of the Surgeon General's report  
 16:29 12 but not that conclusion. If it happened, I'm not  
 16:29 13 aware of it.

16:29 14 Q Are you familiar with the Frank Statement?  
 16:29 15 A Yes, I am.  
 16:29 16 Q If I use that term.  
 17 (Deposition Exhibit No. 15 was marked  
 16:30 18 for identification.)  
 16:30 19 Q I'm handing you what has been marked as Ludmerer  
 16:30 20 Exhibit 15. The Bates number on that one is CTR  
 16:30 21 PUBLIC STMT 000010. The Frank Statement was  
 16:30 22 published in what year, do you remember?  
 16:30 23 A Yes, I do. That would be sometime in January of  
 16:30 24 1954.  
 16:30 25 Q The first paragraph says, "Recent reports on

16:32 1 a tool for other studies. They also themselves  
 16:32 2 made the claim that though consistent with the  
 16:32 3 hypothesis, this is not a proof of that. So the  
 16:32 4 authors of the studies themselves are a very good  
 16:32 5 place to begin.

16:32 6 Q Then in the next paragraph there are some points  
 16:32 7 that are numbered 1, 2, 3 and 4. And number 4  
 16:32 8 says, "Statistics purporting to link cigarette  
 16:32 9 smoking with the disease could apply with equal  
 16:32 10 force to any one of many other aspects of modern  
 16:32 11 life." Do you know what other aspects of modern  
 16:32 12 life are being alluded to here?  
 16:32 13 A Yes. Now, again we are looking January, 1954 so  
 16:33 14 we have to put it in the context of the time. A  
 16:33 15 lot of the possibilities that would come up in the  
 16:33 16 thirties and forties had already been excluded.  
 16:33 17 You will remember from some of my earlier comments  
 16:33 18 that I pointed out how a typical review article of  
 16:33 19 the thirties or forties might have 15 or 20  
 16:33 20 possibilities, now we are down to a handful. The  
 16:33 21 major ones were if we are talking January, '54 --  
 16:33 22 Q I believe you are right.  
 16:33 23 A Because of the appearance of this, that included  
 16:33 24 occupational exposure, environmental pollution,  
 16:33 25 tarring of the roads, exhaust fumes, radiation,

16:30 1 experiments with mice have given wide publicity to  
 16:30 2 a theory that cigarette smoking is in some way  
 16:30 3 linked with lung cancer in human beings." Do you  
 16:31 4 know what experiments TIRC is talking about here?  
 16:31 5 A Yes, I do. They are referring to the Wynder  
 16:31 6 Graham skin painting experiments which were  
 16:31 7 published late 1953, November, December, '53,  
 16:31 8 somewhere in that ball park.

16:31 9 Q And then the third paragraph is, "At the same  
 16:31 10 time, we feel it is in the public interest to call  
 16:31 11 attention to the fact that eminent doctors and  
 16:31 12 research scientists have publicly questioned the  
 16:31 13 claimed significance of these experiments." Who  
 16:31 14 were a couple of those eminent doctors and  
 16:31 15 research scientists, if you know?  
 16:31 16 A I think the best place to start would be Dr.  
 16:31 17 Wynder and Graham themselves who made a point in  
 16:31 18 the paper that their positive experiments in mice  
 16:31 19 was not proof that cigarette smoking in the way  
 16:31 20 human beings smoke cigarettes caused lung cancer  
 16:31 21 in humans. It was obviously consistent with that  
 16:32 22 claim but they themselves explicitly in the papers  
 16:32 23 say their major reason for doing it was to see if  
 16:32 24 they could identify something in cigarette smoking  
 16:32 25 that might be carcinogenic and then you would have

16:33 1 the whole fall-out issue. But the same type of  
 16:34 2 statistical correlation between the tarring of the  
 16:34 3 roads, between the pollution of the atmosphere,  
 16:34 4 between exhaust fumes occurred as it did with  
 16:34 5 cigarette smoking. So it is my understanding that  
 16:34 6 those handful of associations are what were meant  
 16:34 7 by that statement. By the way, that's a smaller  
 16:34 8 list than of the thirties and forties. But in the  
 16:34 9 context of January, 1954, in my judgment it is a  
 16:34 10 reasonable list.

16:34 11 Q Why is the list smaller than in the thirties and  
 16:34 12 forties?  
 16:34 13 A Because there was -- because in science, evidence  
 16:34 14 counts. And people are now really investigating  
 16:34 15 the issue more intensely and with more refined  
 16:34 16 techniques and methodologies. The influence of  
 16:35 17 pandemic of 1819 that some people thought was a  
 16:35 18 cause of lung cancer, there was no evidence to  
 16:35 19 document that. Could lung cancer arise from  
 16:35 20 previous infection of the lung, you have an  
 16:35 21 abscess, Tuberculosis, there was no evidence of  
 16:35 22 that. When I was a medical student in the 1970's,  
 16:35 23 even then I recall hearing house officers and  
 16:35 24 attending physicians speak of this phenomena that  
 16:35 25 they called scar carcinoma, the idea of the lung

16:35 1 cancer coming out of the scar. Trauma had been  
 16:35 2 ruled out. There are things that from our  
 16:35 3 perspective looked silly, but again the historian  
 16:35 4 analyzes things at the time. In the thirties, it  
 16:36 5 is in my bibliography, it really astounded me,  
 16:36 6 there were seven, eight, 10 papers suggesting  
 16:36 7 tomato juice was the cause of lung cancer. No one  
 16:36 8 had any evidence to document that. So in this  
 16:36 9 period you have 15, 20, maybe even 25  
 16:36 10 possibilities bandied about. But now people --  
 16:36 11 not only are more people investigating the cause  
 16:36 12 of lung cancer --  
 16:36 13 **Q When you use the word now, you mean January, 1954?**  
 16:36 14 **A** January '54, and since 1950 it really became a hot  
 16:36 15 issue. Epidemiological techniques are being  
 16:36 16 refined, developed and refined, some of these  
 16:36 17 earlier ideas are not finding evidence to verify  
 16:36 18 them. So the 15 to 20, 25 possible causes that  
 16:36 19 you hear about in the thirties are now narrowed  
 16:36 20 down to half a dozen or so by January, 1954. We  
 16:37 21 should add genetics. Genetics is not a  
 16:37 22 statistical association but 1954 the gene is  
 16:37 23 identified, genetics is developing as a science.  
 16:37 24 In 1954 stomach cancer was shown to have a genetic  
 16:37 25 cause. Some people thought that ultimate answer

16:49 1 **A** The most important single observation was the  
 16:49 2 detection of benzoapyrene, an organic polycyclical  
 16:49 3 chemical. The first conclusive demonstration of  
 16:49 4 that was 1954 that subsequently was confirmed many  
 16:49 5 times. As I indicated confirmation and  
 16:49 6 replication were of part of the scientific  
 16:50 7 process. Other polycyclics were subsequently  
 16:50 8 identified and then ultimately lots of other  
 16:50 9 different types of chemicals as well. The single  
 16:50 10 most important discovery I believe was the  
 16:50 11 discovery of benzoapyrene in 1954. It was  
 16:50 12 confirmed according to the Surgeon General 19  
 16:50 13 times in the intervening decade by 1964.  
 16:50 14 **Q And what date was it widely concluded that the**  
 16:50 15 **amount of benzoapyrene in tobacco smoke was simply**  
 16:50 16 **too small to have a cancer causing effect?**  
 16:50 17 **A** Almost from the beginning.  
 16:50 18 **Q That was again I'm sorry, did you say a --**  
 16:51 19 **A** The first discovery was 1964 of the presence of  
 16:51 20 benzoapyrene.  
 16:51 21 **Q '64?**  
 16:51 22 **A** Excuse me, '54 was the first discovery. Now when  
 16:51 23 did people start noticing that you got a problem  
 16:51 24 with dosage? I'm not entirely sure when the first  
 16:51 25 one was but I know as early as '56 or '57 Dr.

16:37 1 for lung cancer might be a genetic one. Of course  
 16:37 2 we also should put other. There was no guarantee  
 16:37 3 at the time that any of these possibilities would  
 16:37 4 ultimately be shown to be the factor. We were  
 16:37 5 down to maybe half a dozen or so if you are  
 16:37 6 talking January of '54. Most of which have this  
 16:37 7 type of statistical association.  
 16:37 8 **THE VIDEOGRAPHER:** Going off the record  
 16:37 9 for a tape change. The time is 4:33 PM.  
 16:48 10 **(Short recess was taken.)**  
 16:48 11 **THE VIDEOGRAPHER:** We are back on the  
 16:48 12 record. The time is 4:44 PM.  
 16:48 13 **Q** Dr. Ludmerer, on Page 4 of your report --  
 16:48 14 **A** Of my report?  
 16:48 15 **Q** Your report, this is the last sentence, it is  
 16:48 16 going to go on to Page 5. It says, "Between the  
 16:49 17 mid 1950's and early 1960's researchers were  
 16:49 18 unable to identify any agent or combination of  
 16:49 19 agents in tobacco smoke that could account for its  
 16:49 20 alleged cancer-causing activity."  
 16:49 21 Did researchers identify any kind of  
 16:49 22 hazardous -- at that point many time, I'm sorry,  
 16:49 23 any kind of hazardous chemicals in tobacco smoke?  
 16:49 24 **A** Yes, they did.  
 16:49 25 **Q** What kind of chemicals?

16:51 1 Wynder himself discussed this problem of dosage  
 16:51 2 and this became a recurrent theme in the  
 16:51 3 literature. As we sit here today I recall an  
 16:51 4 article from Lancet in 1962 that discussed the  
 16:51 5 same problem. Benzoapyrene is there and by now  
 16:51 6 other known carcinogens as well. But the dose is  
 16:51 7 too low to account for the observed carcinogenic  
 16:51 8 properties of cigarette smoke. This is also a  
 16:52 9 thing I'm sure you are aware in Surgeon General's  
 16:52 10 report itself, in the report it calls this, a  
 16:52 11 quote, puzzling anomaly. That's the Surgeon  
 16:52 12 General's term, not Ludmerer's term.  
 16:52 13 They would have expected theoretically 40  
 16:52 14 times the amount of benzoapyrene than  
 16:52 15 investigators were able to demonstrate if  
 16:52 16 benzoapyrene were the cause of the carcinogenic  
 16:52 17 potential they were seeing in cigarette smoke.  
 16:52 18 That's what the discussion was about.  
 16:52 19 **Q** Up to the Surgeon General's report then in 1964,  
 16:52 20 had any agent or combination of agents and in  
 16:52 21 tobacco smoke that could account for its cancer  
 16:52 22 causing activity, was any agent identified?  
 16:52 23 **MR. WOODS:** objection.  
 16:53 24 **A** The problem as I understand it through the Surgeon  
 16:53 25 General's report was that no single agent or

Page 229

16:53 1 combination of what by then was a large number of  
 16:53 2 known agents, was sufficient to account for the  
 16:53 3 carcinogenic potential. And this was troubling --  
 16:53 4 a troubling piece of evidence. They thought it  
 16:53 5 would be easy, benzoapyrene, here you have the  
 16:53 6 high dosages, and that's the cause. It led to a  
 16:53 7 discussion of promoters and co-carcinogens and  
 16:53 8 things of that sort. But it was largely the  
 16:53 9 theoretical level. If you look at the 1964  
 16:53 10 Surgeon General's report is dominant observation  
 16:53 11 is what the Surgeon General calls a puzzling  
 16:53 12 anomaly. Lots of carcinogens demonstrated be  
 16:53 13 present in cigarette smoke but such low dosages  
 16:53 14 that we are unable to relate the carcinogenic  
 16:54 15 properties to those chemicals. So either there is  
 16:54 16 something else that we are not -- it didn't keep  
 16:54 17 them from accepting -- you don't have to know the  
 16:54 18 mechanism to know that something causes a problem.  
 16:54 19 You don't have to know about vitamins to know that  
 16:54 20 citrus fruit will prevent scurvy and if you  
 16:54 21 develop scurvy you can give citrus fruit. In  
 16:54 22 terms of the biological reaction. It was  
 16:54 23 troubling. They thought they had identified the  
 16:54 24 carcinogen but it turned out with further inquiry  
 16:54 25 they really hadn't at 1964.

Page 230

16:54 1 And I would like to volunteer this. I know  
 16:54 2 in depositions witnesses should say less rather  
 16:54 3 than little, but just in terms of the theme we  
 16:54 4 have been taking of words I would say differently  
 16:54 5 and so forth if I proofread it a little more  
 16:54 6 carefully of that sort.  
 16:54 7 **Q What page should I turn to?**  
 16:54 8 **A Turn to Page 5. First sentence of that page, "The**  
 16:55 9 **inability to identify this unknown agent was also**  
 16:55 10 **considered strong evidence against the causation**  
 16:55 11 **hypothesis in the 1950's and the early 1960's."**  
 16:55 12 **Literally that's true. And I defend that but**  
 16:55 13 **quite frankly I would phrase it differently and**  
 16:55 14 **talk about, say something to the effect that the**  
 16:55 15 **inability to identify this unknown agent was**  
 16:55 16 **disturbing in terms of proving the causation, the**  
 16:55 17 **hypothesis, something of that sort.**  
 16:55 18 **There are a few places in this report as we**  
 16:55 19 **talked about already where words are a little more**  
 16:55 20 **dogmatic or axiomatic than I really intend them to**  
 16:55 21 **be, and I would like to correct the wording of**  
 16:55 22 **that now.**  
 16:56 23 **Q This is on Page 6 --**  
 16:56 24 **A Of my report?**  
 16:56 25 **Q Of your report. It is that first paragraph where**

Page 231

16:56 1 you are discussing the disagreement in the  
 16:56 2 statistical community. You talk about Fisher in  
 16:56 3 England and Berkson at the Mayo Clinic, and then  
 16:56 4 the second to the last sentence, "These are only a  
 16:56 5 few of the many scientists at the time who  
 16:56 6 questioned whether the scientific evidence of that  
 16:56 7 time established that smoking caused lung cancer."  
 16:56 8 Can you give me the names of two other scientists  
 16:56 9 in addition to Berkson and Fisher who questioned  
 16:56 10 that?  
 16:56 11 **A Who questioned whether cigarette smoking caused**  
 16:57 12 **lung cancer?**  
 16:57 13 **Q I think it is who questioned whether the**  
 16:57 14 **scientific evidence at that time established that**  
 16:57 15 **smoking caused lung cancer.**  
 16:57 16 **A Well, there are lots of such individuals. Though,**  
 16:57 17 **as I said before, we've got a very rapid dynamic**  
 16:57 18 **so people who may have expressed skepticism in**  
 16:57 19 **1956 may have jumped on board by 1960. So there**  
 16:57 20 **is a dynamic. By the way, American Lung**  
 16:57 21 **Association, one of the major public health**  
 16:57 22 **associations, I think it was the Lung Association,**  
 16:57 23 **refused to accept causality in 1956. But in 1960**  
 16:57 24 **it did. So again you have this evolving dynamic.**  
 16:57 25 **But in terms of the scientists themselves, in**

Page 232

16:58 1 addition to Drs. Fisher and Berkson, you got  
 16:58 2 several different types of people. In my opinion  
 16:58 3 the most important were the eminent laboratory  
 16:58 4 workers who just were of the world view they need  
 16:58 5 laboratory confirmation. Examples would include  
 16:58 6 Dr. Frank Corsfeld who was in charge of things at  
 16:58 7 Memorial Sloan-Kettering. Dr. Stanley Greenam who  
 16:58 8 was charge of the private cancer institute in  
 16:58 9 Philadelphia, who would include Dr. Rod Heller who  
 16:58 10 is director of the National Cancer Institute, it  
 16:58 11 would include Stewart and Shear who respectively  
 16:58 12 were the most important pathologists and the most  
 16:58 13 important experimental cancer researcher at the  
 16:58 14 National Cancer Institute. But laboratory types  
 16:58 15 of people.  
 16:58 16 In addition to that, there were lots of  
 16:58 17 people on the front lines who had yet to be  
 16:58 18 persuaded. By that I'm talking pulmonary  
 16:59 19 physicians, lung surgeons and so forth who are  
 16:59 20 part of a general community who ultimately came on  
 16:59 21 board in terms of the final consensus but through  
 16:59 22 the sixties are continuing to write articles  
 16:59 23 expressing their disbelief at the causal  
 16:59 24 hypothesis. These were all groups of people in  
 16:59 25 addition to the statisticians like Berkson and

16:59 1 Fisher.

16:59 2 **Q Now, in that last sentence on Page 6, first**

16:59 3 **paragraph, --**

16:59 4 **A I also would like to make an important**

16:59 5 **qualification in my answer to the last question in**

16:59 6 **that sentence. I said it before but I think it is**

16:59 7 **so important that I would like to say it again.**

17:00 8 **From 1950 with the initial retrospective studies**

17:00 9 **through the Surgeon General's report, you got one**

17:00 10 **of the most dynamic rapidly changing and**

17:00 11 **developing areas in all of medicine and you have**

17:00 12 **what I like to call a growing consensus or**

17:00 13 **evolving consensus or emerging consensus. I am**

17:00 14 **not saying that people were suspending judgment**

17:00 15 **during this period or that you have people equally**

17:00 16 **lined up on both sides waiting the final dictate**

17:00 17 **from the Surgeon Generals. It wasn't like that at**

17:00 18 **all. Each year more evidence is accumulated, new**

17:00 19 **statistical techniques are devised, new studies**

17:00 20 **are published, there is an ongoing dialog among**

17:00 21 **all investigators that was invigorating and**

17:00 22 **stimulated further research.**

17:00 23 **You find year by year more and more**

17:00 24 **physicians and scientists being converted to the**

17:01 25 **view that cigarette smoking causes lung cancer,**

17:02 1 that leads you to other things. And what I found

17:02 2 were things such as Professor Brownlee's negative

17:02 3 review of the Surgeon General's report that

17:02 4 appeared in the Journal of the American

17:02 5 Statistical Association in 1965. I would call

17:02 6 that a primary source. And I use that in the

17:02 7 context we said before. I'm not saying there

17:02 8 wasn't a consensus. I'm not saying that the

17:03 9 public debate didn't quiet down. But am I willing

17:03 10 to say that someone who may not have gone along

17:03 11 with the Surgeon General's report, particularly

17:03 12 someone later in their career, particularly

17:03 13 someone who had a different paradigm, am I willing

17:03 14 to speak in a derogatory fashion about that

17:03 15 person? I'm not. That's what I'm really trying

17:03 16 to say here.

17:03 17 **Q All I'm trying to figure out is how far your**

17:03 18 **actual literature review went. For instance, that**

17:03 19 **article you mentioned just now --**

17:03 20 **A That was 1965.**

17:03 21 **Q That was probably the last piece of primary**

17:03 22 **literature that you read?**

17:03 23 **A That's correct.**

17:03 24 **Q Will I find that in one of the bibliographies?**

17:03 25 **A Yes. And I found that by accident. By accident I**

17:01 1 and I agree with the Surgeon General's

17:01 2 characterization in his report that even from the

17:01 3 '59 public health statement through '64 there was

17:01 4 an additional turn of sentiment and more people

17:01 5 from the scientific community who came on board.

17:01 6 What I'm saying is that you didn't yet have that

17:01 7 full consensus and that you had responsible people

17:01 8 even in the sixties who had not yet come on board.

17:01 9 I'm not trying to suggest the suspension of belief

17:01 10 or people lining up on both sides or anything of

17:01 11 that sort. I don't wish my views to be

17:01 12 misinterpreted.

17:01 13 **Q Page 6, second paragraph, "These areas of**

17:01 14 **disagreement continued in scientific circles up**

17:01 15 **through and even beyond the Surgeon General's**

17:01 16 **advisory committee report of 1964." Now, am I**

17:01 17 **right to assume that you did not read primary**

17:02 18 **literature after January of 1964?**

17:02 19 **A That is correct.**

17:02 20 **Q So this opinion is based more on secondary**

17:02 21 **literature?**

17:02 22 **A Well, it is based on -- actually that opinion**

17:02 23 **comes from primary sources that I found. I didn't**

17:02 24 **systematically review, but you read something, you**

17:02 25 **look at the bibliography and the references and**

17:03 1 mean you read an article, including secondary

17:03 2 sources, I look at the sources, so I found that

17:03 3 and I couldn't tell you where offhand, but this

17:04 4 worked out 13, 14, 15 years ago, but I found it in

17:05 5 a bibliography of a secondary source and I went

17:05 6 and looked at the original.

17:05 7 **Q Are there many other articles between January of**

17:05 8 **1964 and January, 1965, that you have reviewed**

17:05 9 **included in your references and are part of your**

17:05 10 **opinions?**

17:05 11 **A Not many. That may even be the only one. It is**

17:05 12 **notable because it illustrates so many important**

17:05 13 **points. But I did stop my primary study of the**

17:05 14 **literature with January, 1964. It was serendipity**

17:05 15 **that I learned of the Brownlee. It taught me a**

17:05 16 **lot but I did not systematically go beyond 1964,**

17:05 17 **I'm not testifying beyond 1964.**

17:05 18 **Q This is on Page 6 and it is that second paragraph.**

17:05 19 **Several questions about terminology so I will just**

17:05 20 **jump in. It is that paragraph that starts, "In**

17:05 21 **1964 the advisory committee made the judgment,"**

17:05 22 **then ends with, "embraced the report." That's**

17:05 23 **about three sentences. Again you are talking**

17:05 24 **about the consensus. Again I just want to make**

17:06 25 **sure we are still talking about the consensus**

17:06 1 among the scientific and medical community,  
 17:06 2 correct?  
 17:06 3 A That's correct. And again, on this question of  
 17:06 4 wording and tone, the real point that I am making  
 17:06 5 has to do with this issue of legitimate  
 17:06 6 disagreement, paradigm shift, scientific  
 17:06 7 revolution, to get the 100 percent of people on  
 17:06 8 board rather than the 98 or 99 percent. The last  
 17:06 9 one or two percent usually has to die off or  
 17:06 10 retire as opposed to being persuaded. It doesn't  
 17:06 11 mean they are being dishonest or acting in an  
 17:07 12 unethical fashion or some sort. There are people  
 17:07 13 like Dr. Brownlee who had a different paradigm  
 17:07 14 could not accept the new paradigm. That's really  
 17:07 15 a point that I'm making. I am maintaining that  
 17:07 16 our consensus came with the Surgeon General's  
 17:07 17 report. I'm not moving that back.  
 17:07 18 Q Is it true, though, that the consensus was growing  
 17:07 19 ever since, during the fifties and the early  
 17:07 20 sixties?  
 17:07 21 A Well, as I have been attempting to say all day, we  
 17:07 22 got a watershed, that's Dr. Doll's term, in 1950,  
 17:07 23 and from that point forward the scientific  
 17:07 24 community was very worried that cigarette smoking  
 17:07 25 caused lung cancer. Now, there is a lot of

17:07 1 disbelief initially and even the authors of the  
 17:07 2 retrospective studies were very careful and would  
 17:07 3 not conclude cause and effect relationship. That  
 17:07 4 really changes in the mid fifties as you know with  
 17:07 5 prospective studies. As I have been saying all  
 17:07 6 day, this is a dynamic.  
 17:07 7 There was a substantial body of information  
 17:10 8 available to the Surgeon General in 1964 that his  
 17:10 9 predecessor, Dr. Burney, didn't have in 1959. New  
 17:10 10 work is continuing to be done. New methods are  
 17:10 11 continuing to be developed and applied. New  
 17:10 12 proofs are continuing to be demonstrated. So  
 17:10 13 every year you find the scientific community more  
 17:10 14 concerned. And I have been using the term growing  
 17:10 15 consensus, evolving consensus, to describe the  
 17:10 16 phenomena that the Surgeon General describes it.  
 17:10 17 Even from '59 to '64 there was a decided term  
 17:10 18 sentiment in the scientific community with even  
 17:10 19 more people accepting the causation hypothesis.  
 17:10 20 So it is a very rapid dynamic. Each year in  
 17:10 21 response to evidence and argument more and more  
 17:10 22 people are jumping on board, and that continues  
 17:10 23 through the Surgeon General's report which is the  
 17:10 24 terminal event in this chain that goes back for a  
 17:10 25 considerable period of time.

17:10 1 Q A couple other terms you have used throughout the  
 17:10 2 day are retroactive and prospective.  
 17:10 3 A Retrospective.  
 17:10 4 Q Retrospective and prospective studies. Can you  
 17:10 5 for a layman just define what those are?  
 17:10 6 A Yes. Retrospective means looking backwards.  
 17:10 7 Prospective means looking forward. The  
 17:10 8 retrospective clinical studies, typically you  
 17:10 9 would get some patients with lung cancer and then  
 17:10 10 do chart reviews and try to get a control group  
 17:10 11 that is as close to the patient, group of patients  
 17:10 12 as you have and control for as many variables that  
 17:10 13 you think of to see what factors might be  
 17:10 14 different between those who develop lung cancer  
 17:10 15 and healthy population that did not. Initial  
 17:10 16 epidemiological studies that were published, they  
 17:10 17 continue to be published, but beginning in 1950,  
 17:10 18 were retrospective studies.  
 17:10 19 Prospective studies means going forward. The  
 17:10 20 prospective studies began being published in the  
 17:10 21 1950's. They were continued beyond that time.  
 17:10 22 They didn't stop then. They began in the fifties  
 17:10 23 and continued. There you have a large population  
 17:10 24 of patients, you divided them between those who  
 17:10 25 smoked and those who didn't smoke, and you

17:10 1 followed forward over time with what happened to  
 17:10 2 them. For various technical and mathematical  
 17:10 3 reasons the intellectual power of the prospective  
 17:10 4 studies is much greater than those of  
 17:10 5 retrospective studies, so they were very  
 17:10 6 instrumental in changing opinion on this issue.  
 17:10 7 Q Do you know what the public position of the  
 17:10 8 tobacco industry about causation was when the  
 17:10 9 Surgeon General's report was released?  
 17:11 10 A No, I don't. I have not studied the tobacco  
 17:11 11 industries position on these issues at all. It is  
 17:11 12 out of my area and I haven't studied it and have  
 17:11 13 no intention to do so. That's a different expert,  
 17:11 14 you can ask him about that.  
 17:11 15 Q We are near the end of Page 6, that second  
 17:11 16 paragraph, and I'm going to read whole section  
 17:11 17 because if I just read the sentence I have a  
 17:11 18 question about it is out of context. "Merely  
 17:11 19 because a consensus had developed does not mean  
 17:11 20 that people cannot legitimately disagree. Many of  
 17:11 21 the dissenting scientists disagreed with the  
 17:12 22 judgment of the 1964 report because they did not  
 17:12 23 accept that epidemiology could prove causality.  
 17:12 24 They held out for a higher standard of proof, one  
 17:12 25 requiring experimental proof of causation." It is

Page 241

17:12 1 a general question about the term higher standard  
 17:12 2 of proof. What are the various levels of  
 17:12 3 scientific proof? *did you win the*  
 17:12 4 A Well, that depends on what your world view is. *proof?*  
 17:12 5 Again, you are dealing with basic theoretical and  
 17:12 6 philosophical issues. The traditional standard of  
 17:12 7 proof has been the experimental model. So if I  
 17:12 8 want to demonstrate that lack of insulin causes  
 17:12 9 diabetes, I have to get people or dogs and take  
 17:12 10 out the pancreas and show that it produces  
 17:12 11 diabetes. Then even better if I give them  
 17:12 12 insulin, they do well. An experimental  
 17:12 13 demonstration.  
 17:12 14 In the area of toxicology, and pharmacology  
 17:13 15 which is fairly closely related to cancer, if you  
 17:13 16 are talking about an agent that causes disease,  
 17:13 17 this was a traditional standard, if you got a  
 17:13 18 poison you have to be able to show with animals  
 17:13 19 that it is a poison. Humans, you can do it with  
 17:13 20 humans too, although that is not ethical in most  
 17:13 21 cases. This laboratory demonstration and an  
 17:13 22 experiment that arsenic makes you sick or that an  
 17:13 23 overdose of a certain medication makes you sick,  
 17:13 24 this was the traditional method of showing  
 17:13 25 causation that dominated medicines from the dawn

Page 242

17:13 1 of the modern era with anatomy, vesalius (ph) and  
 17:13 2 so forth. It was also the dominant paradigm in  
 17:13 3 old infectious disease, epidemiology and public  
 17:13 4 health, where you -- the so-called true separate  
 17:13 5 form of epidemiology because you would use coax  
 17:14 6 postulates. If you got -- if someone were ill  
 17:14 7 with an infection you can culture the organism and  
 17:14 8 show that it is there. So this laboratory model  
 17:14 9 applied to infection in the epidemiology of  
 17:14 10 infectious diseases as opposed to -- as well.  
 17:14 11 Now chronic disease has come along in the  
 17:14 12 middle of the century and started receiving the  
 17:14 13 focus after World War II. And the problem that  
 17:14 14 medical science faced was that the tools of the  
 17:14 15 infectious disease epidemiology or the old  
 17:14 16 epidemiology as a generalization were not  
 17:14 17 suitable, were not powerful enough to show cause  
 17:14 18 and effect for cancer and other chronic diseases,  
 17:14 19 and the laboratory people were having a hard time  
 17:15 20 too because cancer was a tough nut to crack. Keep  
 17:15 21 in mind the context of the time. We are talking  
 17:15 22 forties and fifties. We are not talking electron  
 17:15 23 microscopes and inframeries and geno projects. We  
 17:15 24 are talking test tubes and beakers. And in fact  
 17:15 25 DNA wasn't even identified structurally until '53

Page 243

17:15 1 or '54. So the experimentalists were not having  
 17:15 2 the same -- any more luck with chronic diseases  
 17:15 3 either. But the traditional standard of proof  
 17:15 4 that applied both for causation did involve this  
 17:15 5 ability to show in an experimental fashion that  
 17:15 6 this agent causes disease. You could do it with  
 17:15 7 infections, coax postulates. You could do it in a  
 17:15 8 laboratory by giving an animal a toxin. And that  
 17:15 9 was unsuccessful with lung cancer and other  
 17:16 10 chronic diseases as well.  
 17:16 11 So as a result, we have the creation of a new  
 17:16 12 discipline, the epidemiology of chronic diseases.  
 17:16 13 One of the authors that I cite in my bibliography  
 17:16 14 calls this the second epidemiological revolution.  
 17:16 15 Infectious disease epidemiology being the first.  
 17:16 16 You start doing not only retrospective studies but  
 17:16 17 very well designed retrospective studies in terms  
 17:16 18 of patient selection and randomization and  
 17:16 19 controls and variables that you look at. And even  
 17:16 20 more important development is the development of  
 17:16 21 the prospective studies and not only their conduct  
 17:16 22 but the statistical analysis that is done and what  
 17:16 23 use of the data that you make, and then how one  
 17:16 24 can make inferences about causality in the absence  
 17:16 25 of direct experimental proof. This was the great

Page 244

17:17 1 contribution of the Surgeon General's report in my  
 17:17 2 opinion with this five criteria for causality,  
 17:17 3 some of which was statistical. Coherence was  
 17:17 4 important. The fact that the biological evidence  
 17:17 5 was consistent with the hypothesis strengthened  
 17:17 6 the epidemiological evidence; and many people,  
 17:17 7 including Dr. Wynder, considered coherence to most  
 17:17 8 important of the five criteria.  
 17:17 9 A new discipline is created which allows  
 17:17 10 medical science to draw conclusions about  
 17:17 11 causality even in the absence of direct  
 17:17 12 experimental proof. It is inferential. There is  
 17:17 13 more uncertainty. We will still draw conclusions.  
 17:17 14 And that's what happened. You have a new world  
 17:17 15 view arising to co-exist with the whole view. You  
 17:17 16 have the development of the epidemiology of  
 17:17 17 chronic diseases as a new field in biomedicine.  
 17:18 18 It is spread in medical schools and teaching and  
 17:18 19 training programs and so forth. It is a respected  
 17:18 20 discipline today. This is the period that it is  
 17:18 21 being created.  
 17:18 22 These are the concepts that I'm referring to  
 17:18 23 here, how people, particularly the older  
 17:18 24 generation who have grown up with traditional  
 17:18 25 paradigm, that you need experimental evidence.

17:18 1 Some of them were reluctant to accept the new  
17:18 2 paradigm that even without direct experimental  
17:18 3 data you could draw conclusions about causality.  
17:18 4 What happens over the 1950 to 1964 period is that  
17:18 5 even most of the laboratory workers were converted  
17:18 6 to the new view. Even most of the statisticians  
17:18 7 were converted to the new view. And the remaining  
17:18 8 few might have been 60, 65, 70 years old in 1964  
17:18 9 who still may have been responsibly skeptical,  
17:19 10 retired and died. And the use of words depends on  
17:19 11 the context. If you were talking the views of  
17:19 12 traditional laboratory workers in the 1950's and  
17:19 13 1960's, they would say you need a higher standard  
17:19 14 of proof, you need an experimental documentation  
17:19 15 and verification.

17:19 16 If I were writing this today very candidly I  
17:19 17 would attempt not to be provocative. I would say  
17:19 18 they held out for the traditional standard of  
17:19 19 proof. As I sit here today I prefer that word to  
17:19 20 a higher standard of proof. The fact that it is  
17:19 21 different doesn't mean it is higher. But you have  
17:19 22 a new standard and I would change that word if we  
17:19 23 were -- if I were editing it today.

17:19 24 Q You mentioned a couple of times the second  
17:19 25 epidemiological revolution. What was the time

17:21 1 other problems, high blood pressure, cholesterol,  
17:21 2 etc.  
17:21 3 Q I'm going to give you an example of a study  
17:21 4 that -- and I don't have a medical background so I  
17:21 5 apologize if I'm using the wrong terminology --  
17:21 6 but it is one I have seen a lot and I find real  
17:21 7 interesting. I believe it is a map of London, I  
17:21 8 believe we are in the 18th or 19th century, I  
17:21 9 believe it is map of all of the wells in a certain  
17:21 10 area of London that had a high cholera epidemic,  
17:21 11 and it shows -- let's say there is eight wells, a  
17:21 12 series of dots where people have gotten cholera.  
17:21 13 Whoever did this study realized they were centered  
17:21 14 around one particular well; closed down the well,  
17:22 15 the cholera epidemic went down drastically.

17:22 16 A That was Dr. Snow.

17:22 17 Q Is that an epidemiological study or an  
17:22 18 experimental, or are there some other divisions  
17:22 19 that we haven't been talking about today?

17:22 20 A You know, I believe in simplicity, especially late  
17:22 21 in the day. I call that an outstanding and  
17:22 22 extraordinarily important epidemiological study.  
17:22 23 The infectious disease epidemiology wasn't fully  
17:22 24 matured yet because this is before the germ theory  
17:22 25 of disease so he wasn't able to culture the

17:20 1 period of the first epidemiological revolution?  
17:20 2 A Well in general people they are talking about  
17:20 3 epidemiology for infectious diseases so you are  
17:20 4 going back to the 18th, 19th century, particularly  
17:20 5 late 19th century after development of  
17:20 6 bacteriology and germ theory of disease because  
17:20 7 now epidemiologists can really track infections  
17:20 8 diseases with contacts and culture and so forth.  
17:20 9 Probably late 19th century would be a good time to  
17:20 10 look at that aspect of it.

17:20 11 Then you got the mid 20th century and  
17:20 12 infectious diseases certainly don't go away but  
17:20 13 they are less important in terms of the toll they  
17:20 14 are taking on Western society. You got these  
17:20 15 chronic diseases. The intellectual tools of  
17:20 16 infectious disease epidemiology were  
17:20 17 unsatisfactory and incapable of solving the  
17:20 18 problems of chronic diseases, so a new field was  
17:20 19 created. As I said before, in my judgment that's  
17:21 20 the most important and most exciting consequence  
17:21 21 of this investigation into lung cancer. To show  
17:21 22 that cigarette smoking causes lung cancer and  
17:21 23 other diseases is a heck of an important  
17:21 24 contribution. I'm even equally if not more  
17:21 25 impressed by a new field that can be applied to

17:22 1 organism as later epidemiologists might have been  
17:22 2 able to do.

17:22 3 The concept that I think is relevant here is  
17:22 4 that chronic diseases behave differently from  
17:22 5 acute diseases, and particularly infectious  
17:22 6 diseases, that's why the type of diagram that Dr.  
17:23 7 Snow successfully did for cholera didn't work in  
17:23 8 lung cancer. In the world view of all scientists,  
17:23 9 including epidemiologists in the mid century, you  
17:23 10 are custom of thinking of a single cause. Now we  
17:23 11 think of relative risk. That's one of the  
17:23 12 contributions of the new epidemiology. And the  
17:23 13 concept of disease causation that was  
17:23 14 traditionally accepted, if something causes a  
17:23 15 disease it happens right away or within a  
17:23 16 reasonably measurable period of time.

17:23 17 These are among the reasons why initially  
17:23 18 there was so much skepticism towards cigarette  
17:23 19 smoking as a cause of lung cancer. It didn't fit  
17:23 20 the paradigm of the day. If it really is  
17:23 21 cigarette smoking, why is it that people who start  
17:23 22 smoking don't get lung cancer. The concept of a  
17:24 23 latency, of latency, the concept of a lag period  
17:24 24 had yet to be developed. It was developed, but it  
17:24 25 had yet to be developed, at least as skepticism.

17:24 1 Another way that the chronic -- that the tools of  
 17:24 2 the earlier year were not satisfactory for the  
 17:24 3 problems of chronic disease is the fact that --  
 17:24 4 with acute illnesses in general everyone gets  
 17:24 5 sick. If you have never had measles and you are  
 17:24 6 exposed to someone with measles, you get it. If  
 17:24 7 you are exposed to someone with venereal disease  
 17:24 8 you will probably get it. You contract it. If  
 17:24 9 you fall off the fourth floor of a building you  
 17:24 10 are probably going to hurt yourself. If you take  
 17:24 11 this toxin or that poison, you are going to get  
 17:24 12 sick. The only question is what the dosage is.  
 17:24 13 Everything happens immediately.  
 17:24 14 The latency period, the lag period were  
 17:25 15 puzzling and mysterious to the people of the mid  
 17:25 16 century who had grown up on the traditional acute  
 17:25 17 disease model. In addition, the fact that with  
 17:25 18 acute diseases you were at great risk. With lung  
 17:25 19 cancer you were at little risk. This was  
 17:25 20 disturbing to people at the time in terms of  
 17:25 21 initial acceptance.  
 17:25 22 There were 18,000 -- in 1930 there were  
 17:25 23 approximately 3,000 deaths from lung cancer. In  
 17:25 24 1950 there were approximately 18,000 deaths from  
 17:25 25 lung cancer. Even with the 1950 figures, I don't

08:46 1 in case these two depositions get mixed up. So  
 08:46 2 I'm Mary Jo Moltzen representing the United  
 08:46 3 States.  
 4 MS. KURTIN: Noelle Kurtin representing  
 5 the United States.  
 08:46 6 MR. WOODS: David Woods with Shook, Hardy  
 7 & Bacon representing Lorillard Tobacco Company.  
 8 MS. WALKER-BYERLEY: Chris  
 9 Walker-Byerley with Shook, Hardy & Bacon.  
 10 MR. JORDAN: Dan Jordan of Hunton &  
 08:47 11 Williams representing Philip Morris.  
 08:47 12 THE WITNESS: I'm Ken Ludmerer, the  
 08:47 13 person doing deposed.  
 14 DIRECT EXAMINATION (Continued)  
 15 BY MS. MOLTZEN:  
 08:47 16 Q Dr. Ludmerer, you understand that what brings us  
 08:47 17 here today is a lawsuit in which the United States  
 08:47 18 has sued some of the tobacco companies and other  
 08:47 19 entities, correct?  
 08:47 20 A Correct.  
 08:47 21 Q What do you understand the allegations in this  
 08:47 22 particular case to be?  
 08:47 23 A Candidly I don't understand the case very well so  
 08:47 24 I probably will learn something now. But it is my  
 08:47 25 understanding that there are two aspects of the

17:25 1 know if there are 50 million smokers in the U.S.,  
 17:25 2 but roughly three or four smokers out of 10,000  
 17:25 3 developed lung cancer and died from it. That did  
 17:25 4 not make sense with the traditional view where if  
 17:26 5 you are exposed to a toxin it is going to cause  
 17:26 6 it. So all of these things had to be worked out  
 17:26 7 and were worked out.  
 17:26 8 And the second revolution in epidemiology was  
 17:26 9 central to developing these concepts. But those  
 17:26 10 concepts didn't exist at the time. We know them  
 17:26 11 now, it makes sense to us now, but they all had to  
 17:26 12 be figured out and demonstrated and proved and  
 17:26 13 argued and this sort of thing and that was the  
 17:26 14 fifties and sixties.  
 17:26 15 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record.  
 17:26 16 The time is 5:22 PM.  
 17 (The deposition stood in recess at 5:22  
 18 p.m. to reconvene on August 8, 2002, at 8:30 a.m.)  
 19 AUGUST 8, 2002 - VOLUME II OF KENNETH LUDMERER  
 08:46 20 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Today's date is  
 08:46 21 August 8, 2002. The time is 8:42 AM. This is the  
 08:46 22 continuation of the deposition of Kenneth  
 08:46 23 Ludmerer. Please proceed.  
 08:46 24 MS. MOLTZEN: I would like all of us to  
 08:46 25 introduce ourselves for this tape this morning too

08:47 1 case; one is the effort of the United States  
 08:47 2 Government to recover money for payments that it  
 08:47 3 has made over some previous period of time in the  
 08:47 4 Medicare and Medicaid programs for tobacco-related  
 08:48 5 illness, and then secondly I have heard that there  
 08:48 6 is something involving RICO with this case but I  
 08:48 7 can't even tell you what RICO is and I don't  
 08:48 8 understand it and I don't know what those issues  
 08:48 9 are. But that's my understanding of the case.  
 08:48 10 Q When did you first hear about this particular  
 08:48 11 case?  
 08:48 12 A I don't remember exactly, frankly. As I mentioned  
 08:48 13 yesterday, maybe three percent of my time the last  
 08:48 14 few years has been on these sorts of issues. If  
 08:48 15 Mr. Woods should call me there is a deposition or  
 08:48 16 a trial and in a day or two for that. It is not  
 08:48 17 something that I carefully follow. But I don't  
 08:48 18 know. The papers, the last couple of years I  
 08:48 19 remember bearing, reading references to the  
 08:48 20 Department of Justice case and didn't pay much  
 08:48 21 attention to it. It is my recollection that Mr.  
 08:48 22 Woods contacted me about being a witness in this  
 08:48 23 case early of this year, 2002. But that's about  
 08:49 24 it.  
 08:49 25 Q That was my next question, who first contacted you

08:49 1 to ask you to work on this case. And it was Mr.  
 08:49 2 Woods?  
 08:49 3 A That's my recollection as we sit here today that  
 08:49 4 it was Mr. Woods. It is not something I would say  
 08:49 5 with absolute certainty, but it is highly likely.  
 08:49 6 Q And the approximate time period was early in 2002?  
 08:49 7 A It would have either have been late 2001 or early  
 08:49 8 2002. It would have been no later than early 2002  
 08:49 9 because I notice that my expert statement is dated  
 08:49 10 January 30 of 2002. It is possible that he made  
 08:49 11 his original contact with me sometime last fall of  
 08:49 12 last year. Frankly I don't remember precisely.  
 08:49 13 Q Do you remember what kind of information you were  
 08:49 14 given about this case at that first contact and  
 08:49 15 what was expected of you?  
 08:50 16 A Well essentially what I said before in terms of my  
 08:50 17 understanding of the case that it had to do with  
 08:50 18 an attempt to, I don't know what the word would  
 08:50 19 be, recoup or reclaim payments made in previous  
 08:50 20 years under the Medicare program, federal moneys  
 08:50 21 for cigarette-related illness; and then in  
 08:50 22 addition, the issue of RICO was in some way  
 08:50 23 involved with the case. I didn't understand it  
 08:50 24 then, I don't understand it now. And if this case  
 08:50 25 moved forward, would I be willing to give my

08:50 1 conventional historical testimony that we have  
 08:50 2 been discussing on how we came to know that  
 08:50 3 cigarette smoking causes lung cancer. I said if  
 08:50 4 my time permits I would be glad to do it.  
 08:50 5 Q Other than asking you to give testimony, did he  
 08:50 6 ask you to do anything else?  
 08:50 7 A No.  
 08:51 8 Q Since that initial contact what work have you  
 08:51 9 performed?  
 08:51 10 A I performed no new work. And I would say, by the  
 08:51 11 way, that that is true of my involvement with each  
 08:51 12 of the approximately 10 depositions or trials over  
 08:51 13 the last four or five years that we went over  
 08:51 14 yesterday. There has been no new work. My  
 08:51 15 opinions are based on the work that I did in '88  
 08:51 16 and '89 and I have had no new work to do. I  
 08:51 17 report what I did back then. I have not been  
 08:51 18 doing new work.  
 08:51 19 Q How many hours, other than the six hours and 23  
 08:51 20 minutes of this deposition over the last two days,  
 08:51 21 have you put in on this case so far?  
 08:51 22 A I would have to add them up, which I haven't done,  
 08:52 23 but I would say maybe 15 or so. We had a meeting  
 08:52 24 here in Kansas City last week and discussed some  
 08:52 25 of the issues. I flew in late Monday -- excuse

08:52 1 me, late Tuesday, we talked a little bit about it  
 08:52 2 then, reviewed a few of the key papers and so  
 08:52 3 forth over the weekend, so it adds up to maybe 15  
 08:52 4 hours, something of that sort.  
 08:52 5 Q When you say looked at some of the key papers,  
 08:52 6 what do you consider to be the key papers?  
 08:52 7 A I took a look at the Surgeon General's report,  
 08:52 8 some of the important primary or secondary sources  
 08:52 9 in the literature, just my bibliographies to  
 08:52 10 refresh myself with the names and to be as up to  
 08:52 11 date as I can for questions that you might have  
 08:52 12 about some of the specifics.  
 08:52 13 Q When you say Surgeon General's -- did you say  
 08:52 14 Surgeon General's reports?  
 08:52 15 A I said the Surgeon General's report singular  
 08:53 16 referring to the '64 report, not other reports.  
 08:53 17 Q How much do you charge per hour for your work?  
 08:53 18 A As stated in the disclosure itself, \$350 per hour.  
 08:53 19 Q In addition to the \$350 per hour, do you also have  
 08:53 20 any kind of daily charge when you are on travel or  
 08:53 21 do you still charge on an hourly basis?  
 08:53 22 A If I'm away overnight, as we were yesterday,  
 08:53 23 instead of 24 hours I have a \$3500 rate if I'm  
 08:53 24 overnight.  
 08:53 25 Q I want to correct something that neither of us

08:53 1 made an error yesterday but I want to make this as  
 08:53 2 complete as we can. I had given you Exhibit,  
 08:54 3 Deposition Exhibit 5 which I tried to compile a  
 08:54 4 list of the deposition and trial testimony that  
 08:54 5 your attorneys had sent me. I had 10 cases on  
 08:54 6 that. That was in the last four years. Then  
 08:54 7 during our discussion yesterday you added two  
 08:54 8 more, you added the Cipollone deposition and the  
 08:54 9 Kotler trial. They were before -- they were  
 08:54 10 longer than four years, you went back to the  
 08:54 11 beginning for those?  
 08:54 12 A That's correct.  
 08:54 13 Q I think -- there is one more case I want to  
 08:54 14 mention. Did you also possibly either testify by  
 08:54 15 deposition or at trial in a case Moore for the  
 08:54 16 State of Mississippi in 1997?  
 08:54 17 A Is that an Attorney General case, State Attorney  
 08:54 18 General case?  
 08:54 19 Q Could very well have been.  
 08:54 20 A The answer to that is yes.  
 08:54 21 Q I just wanted to make this complete for both you  
 08:55 22 and I. So we have not only 12 but we have 13.  
 08:55 23 A That's correct.  
 08:55 24 Q Was that a deposition or trial?  
 08:55 25 A That was a deposition.

✓ 13 cases

08:55 1 Q And you testified to this a couple times yesterday  
 08:55 2 that you did the original work and then you  
 08:55 3 testified both in Kotler and Cipollone, is that  
 08:55 4 correct?  
 08:55 5 A Correction, I did not testify in the Cipollone  
 08:55 6 case. I gave a deposition as part of the pretrial  
 08:55 7 work for the re-trial of Cipollone. I did not  
 08:55 8 appear at trial in Cipollone and I was not part of  
 08:55 9 the first Cipollone case.  
 08:55 10 Q Thank you. Those were in the early nineties.  
 08:55 11 Then there was a break?  
 08:55 12 A About six years.  
 08:55 13 Q About six years. And who initiated the contact  
 08:55 14 after that six year break?  
 08:55 15 A That was Murray Garnick of Arnold & Porter who is  
 08:55 16 the individual that we discussed yesterday who  
 08:56 17 contacted me back in the late eighties. Now, as I  
 08:56 18 said yesterday, I've got other things to do in my  
 08:56 19 life. Total amount of my professional time that  
 08:56 20 has gone into these activities I estimate maybe  
 08:56 21 three percent.  
 08:56 22 So the first time Mr. Garnick contacted me in  
 08:56 23 1996 was to appear in an individual smoker case in  
 08:56 24 the state of Florida, this was the first contact  
 08:56 25 in five or six years, and I declined because I was

08:58 1 Q What is the total amount you have earned from  
 08:58 2 doing the tobacco litigation work to this date?  
 08:58 3 A I would say somewhere between 500 and \$550,000.  
 08:58 4 You mean from the very beginning?  
 08:58 5 Q From the very beginning.  
 08:58 6 A Correct.  
 08:58 7 Q I believe you said you probably have spent about  
 08:58 8 15 hours on this case, correct?  
 08:58 9 A Something of that sort.  
 08:58 10 Q These questions should be pretty easy to answer  
 08:59 11 then. Approximately how much time have you spent  
 08:59 12 reviewing documents and materials in coming up  
 08:59 13 with your opinions for this case?  
 08:59 14 A I'm not sure I understand the question. Are you  
 08:59 15 talking about the specific review for this case or  
 08:59 16 are you talking about the original work that led  
 08:59 17 to my opinions back in --  
 08:59 18 Q I believe that your expert report says the initial  
 08:59 19 work took about 1,000 hours, is that correct?  
 08:59 20 A That's correct. It was a big project. As I  
 08:59 21 mentioned before, had Murray Garnick called me a  
 08:59 22 year earlier or a year later I wouldn't have been  
 08:59 23 able to undertake it because of other projects of  
 08:59 24 my own. But the serendipity of the circumstances  
 08:59 25 was that I was between books and was able to fill

08:56 1 too busy.  
 08:56 2 And then he contacted me roughly a year  
 08:56 3 later, maybe it was six months later, but a period  
 08:56 4 of time after that, in regard to the Attorneys  
 08:56 5 General cases as a group that were being brought,  
 08:56 6 and at that time I said if I'm able to make the  
 08:57 7 time to testify, I will do so. And it was that  
 08:57 8 conversation that led to the Mississippi-Moore  
 08:57 9 deposition. And you are right, this is the last  
 08:57 10 four years through '98. That deposition was 1997  
 08:57 11 and not on here. But that was the sequence of  
 08:57 12 events. Then you have a complete record I think  
 08:57 13 of everything going forward.  
 08:57 14 Q Thank you very much. In that initial work that  
 08:57 15 you did in those two years, you had mentioned  
 08:57 16 yesterday that periodically you would have  
 08:57 17 meetings with one or more attorneys. At those  
 08:57 18 meetings were there any other people present  
 08:57 19 except you and attorneys?  
 08:57 20 A There was some paralegals.  
 08:57 21 Q Were there other experts?  
 08:57 22 A As we sit here today I do not remember any contact  
 08:58 23 or discussions with other experts at any time.  
 08:58 24 Q Were there other historians at the meetings?  
 08:58 25 A No, there were not.

08:59 1 up the time while I was looking for a new book to  
 08:59 2 work on.  
 08:59 3 So the original research that my opinions are  
 08:59 4 based on goes back then. And then I have done for  
 09:00 5 this case what I typically do, I'll spend a little  
 09:00 6 bit of time reviewing notes that you have and  
 09:00 7 records and that sort of thing, refresh myself on  
 09:00 8 names and dates, take a quick look at the Surgeon  
 09:00 9 General's report, things of that sort, as my  
 09:00 10 specific preparation for the deposition.  
 09:00 11 Q So it would just be a couple of hours then? The  
 09:00 12 question was how much time have you spent  
 09:00 13 reviewing documents for this case.  
 09:00 14 A A few hours.  
 09:00 15 Q We are not counting the initial work. 1,000 and  
 09:00 16 two all together?  
 09:00 17 A A few hours.  
 09:00 18 Q Did you read the -- do you know what a complaint  
 09:00 19 in a case is?  
 09:00 20 A I can guess.  
 09:00 21 Q It is the initial pleading that the plaintiff  
 09:00 22 files with the court. Did you read the United  
 09:00 23 States's complaint in this case?  
 09:00 24 A I do not remember having read that. I won't say  
 09:00 25 that I haven't, but I don't remember having read

09:00 1 it.

09:01 2 Q Then the term of art for the response is called

09:01 3 the Answer and so each of the defendants then

09:01 4 answered the allegations in the complaint. Did

09:01 5 you read any of the defendants' answers in this

09:01 6 case?

09:01 7 A No, I did not.

09:01 8 Q Do you know what an interrogatory is?

09:01 9 A No.

09:01 10 Q Once the complaint and answers have been

09:01 11 exchanged, the judge sets up a certain amount of

09:01 12 time in which discovery can be done, including

09:01 13 depositions. But you can also write written

09:01 14 questions to each other, asking them to answer,

09:01 15 and then the interrogatories come in and then you

09:01 16 answer the interrogatories. Do you remember in

09:01 17 this case reading any of the interrogatory

09:01 18 answers?

09:01 19 A I can say definitely I have not seen any

09:01 20 interrogatories.

09:01 21 Q Did you read other expert reports from this case?

09:01 22 A Yes, I did.

09:01 23 Q Which ones were they?

09:01 24 A I read the Brandt report and the Proctor report.

09:02 25 Q Did you read any depositions from this case?

09:03 1 remember if you made any changes at that time?

09:03 2 A My recollection is I made a few changes in wording

09:03 3 and tone and so forth. I really cannot tell you

09:03 4 precisely what they are but I do remember making a

09:03 5 few changes and suggestions. My only comment to

09:03 6 that would be that if I were doing it today I

09:04 7 would have made a few more, the ones that we

09:04 8 indicated yesterday. But I'm pretty sure I made a

09:04 9 few changes at that time.

09:04 10 Q Did you preserve a copy of that draft report with

09:04 11 your changes on it?

09:04 12 A No. I think I made a few changes either by pencil

09:04 13 or pen on it and sent it back to them and let them

09:04 14 put it in their own word processor and incorporate

09:04 15 the changes. They sent me back a copy for

09:04 16 signing.

09:04 17 Q What proportion of this current report, Exhibit 2,

09:04 18 is new or different from your original report?

09:04 19 A Could you please explain to me what you mean by my

09:04 20 original report?

09:04 21 Q For the first case -- what was the first case that

09:04 22 you had to write an expert report?

09:05 23 A Frankly I don't remember because each case is

09:05 24 different. And I know there have been other

09:05 25 expert reports but not invariably, and I just

09:02 1 A Not that I recall.

09:02 2 Q The expert report is Exhibit 2?

09:02 3 A Correct. My expert report?

09:02 4 Q Your expert report.

09:02 5 A It is Exhibit 2. I have it in front of me.

09:02 6 Q Okay. Did you prepare the expert report by

09:02 7 yourself?

09:02 8 MR. WOODS: objection.

09:02 9 A As we discussed yesterday, it was a team effort

09:02 10 between myself and representatives of a legal

09:02 11 defense team. I did not draft the original

09:02 12 report. It was drafted for me to save me time.

09:03 13 But it came out of conversations we have had, it

09:03 14 has come out of depositions and trial testimony

09:03 15 and it reflects my views. I proofread it and

09:03 16 signed it. I did some editing. As we discussed

09:03 17 yesterday, quite candidly, I did not look at it

09:03 18 very carefully when it came, because if I were

09:03 19 doing this today there are certain wordings that

09:03 20 we would change, that I would change as we

09:03 21 discussed yesterday. But I did approve it and it

09:03 22 does represent my views. But I didn't sit down

09:03 23 and do the original drafting.

09:03 24 Q When you received the draft from the attorneys and

09:03 25 you said you proofed it and edited it, do you

09:05 1 don't remember which of these required an expert

09:05 2 report and which didn't.

09:05 3 Q Are there a lot of -- what proportion of this

09:05 4 report is different from the most recent report

09:05 5 that you have written?

09:05 6 MR. WOODS: objection.

09:05 7 A There is no substantive difference among any of

09:05 8 the reports. All of the reports express the same

09:05 9 general views. All of the reports relate to

09:05 10 opinions that I formed back in 1988, 1989 when I

09:05 11 did the original work. I do recall that the

09:05 12 requirements of the cases are different so some of

09:06 13 the expert reports are shorter, others are longer.

09:06 14 But essentially in terms of the substance and

09:06 15 opinions, they say the same thing. There have

09:06 16 been no changes substantively from one to another.

09:06 17 In form there may have been, some will be shorter

09:06 18 and some will be longer, but no changes of opinion

09:06 19 or meaning.

09:06 20 Q Have you ever met any of the other historians

09:06 21 testifying for the tobacco defendants in this

09:06 22 case?

09:06 23 A I don't know who the other defendants are so I

09:06 24 would be pleased to respond to that if given the

09:06 25 names but very frankly I don't know who the other

was the deposition was the depositions

2

\*

*Direct testimony  
Production  
by Philip  
Morris*

Page 265

09:06 1 experts are.

09:06 2 Q Have you ever met with Peter English?

09:06 3 A I do know Peter English.

09:06 4 Q Who is Peter English?

09:06 5 A Peter English is a highly regarded physician

09:07 6 historian. He is actually a pediatrician

09:07 7 historian at Duke. He has written a number of

09:07 8 books about rheumatic fever and early physiology.

09:07 9 He is also a well-regarded pediatrician. We have

09:07 10 never discussed legal issues together. In fact, I

09:07 11 didn't even know he was a witness in this

09:07 12 litigation until now. But I am acquainted with

09:07 13 him, think well of him.

09:07 14 Q Are you familiar with Surgeon General Burney's, it

09:07 15 wasn't his report, but it was the report of the

09:07 16 study group on smoking and health organized the

09:07 17 urging of the Surgeon General Burney in about

09:07 18 1957? Are you familiar with the conclusions of

09:08 19 that report?

09:08 20 MR. WOODS: objection.

09:08 21 A Well certainly I recall that the first public

09:08 22 health statement was Surgeon General Burney's 1957

09:08 23 statement, I do remember that, yes.

09:08 24 Q And are you aware that in 1957 public health

09:08 25 officials in Great Britain, I believe the group is

Page 266

09:08 1 called the Medical Research Council, issued a

09:08 2 statement discussing the causal relationship

09:08 3 between tobacco smoking and lung cancer?

09:08 4 A Yes, I am. As we talked about yesterday, and also

09:08 5 as in my previous testimony, just as a

09:08 6 generalization, this is the period that you see a

09:08 7 number of important public health organizations,

09:08 8 private, public, United States and other countries

09:09 9 starting to take stands on that. There were quite

09:09 10 a few others as well.

09:09 11 Q You mentioned this yesterday, I believe, that

09:09 12 again then in 1959 Surgeon General Burney issued a

09:09 13 statement on behalf of the Public Health Service.

09:09 14 Are you aware of that?

09:09 15 A That's correct.

09:09 16 Q And --

09:09 17 A That was a stronger statement than this '57

09:09 18 statement which again indicates in my judgment the

09:09 19 growing consensus and greater degree of confidence

09:09 20 about drawing conclusions. '59 -- as we talked

09:09 21 about yesterday this is a rapidly changing

09:09 22 dynamic. Each year new information coming in, new

09:09 23 tools to analyze information are being developed.

09:09 24 So his statement of 1959 is a stronger statement

09:09 25 than his 1957 statement.

Page 267

09:09 1 Q And then are you aware that in 1960 the World

09:09 2 Health Organization study group also issued a

09:09 3 statement about the relationship between cancer,

09:10 4 lung cancer and smoking?

09:10 5 A I am aware that the World Health Organization came

09:10 6 out with a statement, and I will take it as a

09:10 7 given that the years that you are citing are

09:10 8 correct because I could not recite specifically

09:10 9 which group, which year. But as a generalization

09:10 10 I'm aware that many important health organizations

09:10 11 are taking statements one year and then another,

09:10 12 then the next year someone else jumps on board,

09:10 13 the next year someone else jumps on board and so

09:10 14 forth. I just want to state for the record if I

09:10 15 were taking a test I couldn't say it was World

09:10 16 Health Organization of '59 or '60, or '60 or '61.

09:10 17 I don't have that type of recall as we sit here

09:10 18 today.

09:10 19 Q Would you agree it was before the Surgeon

09:10 20 General's 1964 report?

09:10 21 A Yes. As I have been saying consistently, it is

09:10 22 the late fifties that you are pointing out that

09:10 23 you see many such groups taking such positions,

09:11 24 and increasing into the sixties.

09:11 25 Q Then I want you to turn to Page 6 of your report,

Page 268

09:11 1 and this is going to the sentence that is going to

09:11 2 go from the bottom of Page 6 over to Page 7. "In

09:11 3 conclusion, although the question of a

09:11 4 relationship between cigarette smoking and lung

09:11 5 cancer has certainly become a major concern

09:11 6 between 1950 and 1964, there was no consensus

09:11 7 during this time period among scientific and

09:11 8 medical authorities that cigarette smoking was

09:11 9 hazardous to health." Is that still your opinion

09:11 10 as we sit here today?

09:12 11 A Yes, it is, and it is the opinion that I was

09:12 12 giving yesterday. If I were writing this today, I

09:12 13 think I would add a few adjectives and describe

09:12 14 things as we have been discussing for the past day

09:12 15 about evolving consensus, the growing consensus

09:12 16 because tide is definitely turning. As we

09:12 17 discussed yesterday, to say that there is not a

09:12 18 consensus does not mean that you have equal

09:12 19 numbers of people on both sides reserving

09:12 20 judgment. If you were talking the early sixties,

09:12 21 I would say -- I agree with the Surgeon General,

09:12 22 that the general opinion decidedly had moved to

09:12 23 accept the view that cigarette smoking caused lung

09:12 24 cancer. But for a consensus, not for a dominant

09:12 25 view, not for the overwhelming view, not for the

Page 269

09:12 1 near consensus, if you are talking a consensus,  
09:12 2 what scientists of divergent perspectives and  
09:12 3 traditions and views all except for the laboratory  
09:13 4 workers going along with it as well as  
09:13 5 epidemiologists, but practicing physicians and  
09:13 6 chest surgeons as well as the scientists who are  
09:13 7 studying it, for serious challenge of the argument  
09:13 8 to evaporate, that terminal step in my judgment  
09:13 9 required the first Surgeon General's report and  
09:13 10 that's when our current consensus -- we have a  
09:13 11 near consensus before then, a growing consensus,  
09:13 12 but my research being comprehensive in looking at  
09:13 13 everything that was said found that even in the  
09:13 14 early sixties there were responsible groups,  
09:13 15 responsible scientists who had not yet come on  
09:13 16 board. Fewer of them in the sixties compared to  
09:13 17 the fifties, but not every group had come on  
09:13 18 board. The American Medical Association, for  
09:13 19 example, is an example of a group that was -- that  
09:13 20 changed its view in response to the Surgeon  
09:13 21 General's report. That's another example of how  
09:13 22 the report in my opinion brought about the final  
09:13 23 consensus.  
09:13 24 So I would say that a near consensus. But  
09:14 25 the terminal step in this event that goes back all

Page 270

09:14 1 the way to early observations and suggestions of  
09:14 2 the twenties and thirties and forties it  
09:14 3 terminates, is brought to conclusion with the  
09:14 4 Surgeon General's report. And my judgment, our  
09:14 5 current consensus that cigarette smoking causes  
09:14 6 lung cancer dates from there.  
09:14 7 **Q** The reason I had asked you about some of those  
09:14 8 statements by medical and health authorities is  
09:14 9 because of the wording of this particular  
09:14 10 sentence. And I know we talked about words  
09:14 11 yesterday, but the precision of words is my  
09:14 12 currency, and I'm sure as a scientist it is  
09:14 13 your --  
09:14 14 **A** Right.  
09:14 15 **Q** All of a sudden here you had changed from  
09:14 16 scientific and medical community to scientific and  
09:14 17 medical authorities. So that's why I went back  
09:14 18 and I picked out scientific and medical  
09:14 19 authorities.  
09:14 20 **A** Well now there I would say the same thing.  
09:15 21 Authority and communities. There were  
09:15 22 authoritative scientists in the early sixties who  
09:15 23 remained skeptical because of the lack of  
09:15 24 biological information. There were authoritative  
09:15 25 organizations, the most prominent being the

Page 271

09:15 1 American Medical Association. So you can look at  
09:15 2 it either way. I think either statement is  
09:15 3 correct. You can look at authorities who had yet  
09:15 4 to come on board or you can look at it at the  
09:15 5 community more largely. But I think there either  
09:15 6 word would be correct.  
09:15 7 And this gets back, in my judgment, to the  
09:15 8 evolutionary nature of science. Particularly when  
09:15 9 you have creation of a new model or a new  
09:15 10 paradigm, something big that people wrestle with  
09:15 11 or really debate, you are always going to have  
09:15 12 people who are at the beginning and accepting a  
09:16 13 new idea or concept, most people will be somewhere  
09:16 14 in the broad middle, as we discussed yesterday,  
09:16 15 many people depend on the views of the opinion  
09:16 16 makers, then you all have some people who are more  
09:16 17 conservative for whatever reason who are among the  
09:16 18 last to come on board. That's really where things  
09:16 19 were in the early sixties. Most people, but not  
09:16 20 quite all, had come on board. Whether you use the  
09:16 21 term authorities such as the laboratory scientists  
09:16 22 at the National Cancer Institute, Memorial  
09:16 23 Sloan-Kettering, Philadelphia Cancer Institute, or  
09:16 24 whether you use organizations such as the AMA, or  
09:16 25 whether you use practicing physicians who see

Page 272

09:16 1 patients every day. Most people had come on board  
09:16 2 but you still had this tail end in the early  
09:16 3 1960's. After the Surgeon General's report this  
09:16 4 tail end came on board and that's why I personally  
09:16 5 would date the consensus to the Surgeon General's  
09:17 6 report.  
09:17 7 **Q** Am I correct to say then the change from  
09:17 8 previously using the word community and in this  
09:17 9 one using authorities, you really by changing that  
09:17 10 word weren't trying to reflect a difference or a  
09:17 11 distinction?  
09:17 12 **A** No, I really wasn't. The important point is that  
09:17 13 the same observation is present if you are looking  
09:17 14 at a scientific authority who is doing research  
09:17 15 and writing papers, if you are looking at the  
09:17 16 organizations that are taking positions, and if  
09:17 17 you are looking at the general medical community  
09:17 18 that is practicing medicine. So the same  
09:17 19 phenomena is occurring with all of these. The  
09:17 20 general medical community includes all of these  
09:17 21 people. Obviously some individuals are leaders  
09:17 22 and opinion setters and most are not. But if you  
09:17 23 are looking at the early sixties, there is no  
09:17 24 question that the dominant opinion within the  
09:18 25 medical community had changed. Regardless of



Page 273

09:18 1 whether you are defining medical community the  
 09:18 2 practicing community or the research community,  
 09:18 3 there is no question that sentiment has changed.  
 09:18 4 I agree with the Surgeon General's  
 09:18 5 observation that there had been a decided opinion.  
 09:18 6 But if you are asking the question when did  
 09:18 7 everyone jump on board? When did disagreements  
 09:18 8 stop? I agree with Dr. Sir Richard Doll who says  
 09:18 9 the Surgeon General's report, that's when it  
 09:18 10 stopped. I agree with all of the secondary  
 09:18 11 literature that says the Surgeon General's report  
 09:18 12 brought everyone on board. We know the AMA came  
 09:18 13 on board as a result of that. We know that  
 09:18 14 laboratory workers who were persuaded that this  
 09:18 15 was a legitimate new discipline and epidemiology  
 09:18 16 of chronic disease established itself. The few  
 09:18 17 who were responsible exceptions as we discussed  
 09:18 18 yesterday people as such as Dr. Brownlee who wrote  
 09:19 19 the critical review. In the next few years he  
 09:19 20 retired and died. We know that Sir Richard Doll  
 09:19 21 himself says that with the '64 Surgeon General's  
 09:19 22 report that was the time that serious scientific  
 09:19 23 opposition ended; and that is consistent with what  
 09:19 24 I have found in my work.  
 09:19 25 **Q Does consensus require unanimity?**

Page 274

09:19 1 **A** As we discussed yesterday, no. It is a judgment  
 09:19 2 call. It is not a 100 percent view. Certainly  
 09:19 3 requires a near unanimity, but it is a  
 09:19 4 qualitative, not a quantitative assessment. It  
 09:19 5 depends on who the dissenters are. If a physics  
 09:19 6 graduate student doesn't go along with a certain  
 09:19 7 concept, people are likely not to pay much  
 09:19 8 attention. If Professor Einstein doesn't go along  
 09:19 9 what a certain concept, people are likely to put a  
 09:19 10 lot of credence to that.  
 09:19 11 That, by the way, is one of the reasons for  
 09:20 12 the lingering doubts in the early sixties because  
 09:20 13 the greatest scientific figure in my judgment by  
 09:20 14 far of these events was Sir Ron Fisher. He was  
 09:20 15 the Einstein of biology. And I don't mean this in  
 09:20 16 any way to be derogatory to the great scientists  
 09:20 17 who created the field of epidemiology of chronic  
 09:20 18 disease but they did it based upon the fundamental  
 09:20 19 work that Fisher did mathematically. Fisher is  
 09:20 20 one of the giants of 20th century biology. He was  
 09:20 21 part of the evolutionary genetic synthesis showing  
 09:20 22 that mathematically you can reconcile Darwinian  
 09:20 23 evolution with Medalian genetics. His repeat  
 09:20 24 created the field of biostatistics. The  
 09:20 25 mathematical tools that epidemiologists use to

red  
X  
580

Page 275

09:20 1 analyze data came from some of Fisher's basic  
 09:21 2 work. So for Fisher to have objections it is like  
 09:21 3 Michael Jordan being on my team. This is not just  
 09:21 4 an average person. So you have to look at who is  
 09:21 5 objecting, why people are objecting. But again by  
 09:21 6 definition you are not going to have the consensus  
 09:21 7 if you have -- a consensus means people have come  
 09:21 8 together, people of divergent views; in this case  
 09:21 9 the laboratory people have accepted epidemiology.  
 09:21 10 That happens with the Surgeon General's report.  
 09:21 11 People of divergent views and traditions and  
 09:21 12 sympathies and perspectives accepting an idea or  
 09:21 13 concept, which isn't to say that you can't find  
 09:21 14 somewhere someone somewhere who may object, but  
 09:21 15 that person has become marginal.  
 09:21 16 And all of these things happened with the  
 09:21 17 Surgeon General's report. In Dr. Doll's words,  
 09:21 18 I'm quoting from a paper he wrote that recounts  
 09:22 19 the history of this, he is not a professional  
 09:22 20 historian but lived through and he participated  
 09:22 21 and he remembers events and these are very  
 09:22 22 important issues to him. He is among the many who  
 09:22 23 says that with the first Surgeon General's report  
 09:22 24 serious scientific opposition to the idea is  
 09:22 25 subsided and we moved on to the next step. And I

Page 276

09:22 1 would agree with that interpretation.  
 09:22 2 **Q** When I asked the questions before, it was about  
 09:22 3 preparation, it was the preparation of the expert  
 09:22 4 report. Now I'm moving on to preparation for this  
 09:22 5 particular deposition. What did you do to prepare  
 09:22 6 for this deposition?  
 09:22 7 **A** Well I did what I mentioned in answer to your  
 09:22 8 question a few minutes ago. I had two meetings  
 09:22 9 with Mr. Woods, with Dave Woods and with Chris  
 09:23 10 Walker-Byerley to discuss some of the issues of  
 09:23 11 the case. Over the weekend I reviewed some of my  
 09:23 12 own notes, took a look at the Surgeon General's  
 09:23 13 report, things of that sort, some of the key  
 09:23 14 articles, refresh myself on some of the names and  
 09:23 15 dates and sequence and that type of thing.  
 09:23 16 **Q** How long was your first meeting with your  
 09:23 17 attorneys?  
 09:23 18 **A** Well this would have been I think Wednesday or  
 09:23 19 Thursday of last week. And I would say it went  
 09:23 20 approximately four hours.  
 09:23 21 **Q** Was anyone in attendance besides your attorneys  
 09:23 22 and you?  
 09:23 23 **MR. WOODS:** objection.  
 09:23 24 **Q** I'm sorry, your attorney and your attorney's  
 09:23 25 assistant?

09:23 1 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 09:23 2 Q Between David Woods and Chris Walker-Byerley, was  
 09:24 3 anyone in the room besides those two?  
 09:24 4 A For the approximately four hours of discussion we  
 09:24 5 had -- there was three of us. There was an  
 09:24 6 attorney whose name I do not remember who is  
 09:24 7 involved with this case who walked in the room  
 09:24 8 toward the end of the meeting, said hello, was  
 09:24 9 there for two or three minutes. I don't really  
 09:24 10 consider that person as being part of the meeting  
 09:24 11 but I did see another individual while I was  
 09:24 12 there. The substantive conversation for the four  
 09:24 13 hours that we met was with Chris and Dave.  
 09:24 14 Q How long was the second meeting?  
 09:24 15 A That would have been -- what day is today?  
 09:24 16 Q Today is Thursday, the 9th -- 8th.  
 09:25 17 A So that would have been Tuesday, flew in late  
 09:25 18 Tuesday and we met for, I don't know, two or three  
 09:25 19 hours.  
 09:25 20 Q Who was at that meeting besides you, Chris Byerley  
 09:25 21 and David Woods?  
 09:25 22 A The same two individuals.  
 09:25 23 Q Did you have any other meetings with anyone else  
 09:25 24 about this case?  
 09:25 25 A No.

09:27 1 Q Of all that time part of it of course was  
 09:27 2 preparing and working on the expert report. How  
 09:27 3 much of that was spent on preparing for this  
 09:27 4 deposition?  
 09:27 5 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 09:27 6 A Well, I would say essentially all of those 10 or  
 09:27 7 15 hours has been on the deposition. The expert  
 09:27 8 report as you know came in January, I took a very  
 09:27 9 quick look at it, edited a few things. Obviously  
 09:27 10 today I wish I had taken an even closer look at  
 09:27 11 it, but that was a matter of minutes.  
 09:27 12 Q Do you anticipate reviewing any additional  
 09:27 13 materials in this case?  
 09:27 14 A I reserve the right to should something appear  
 09:27 15 somewhere that I should know about, but I have no  
 09:28 16 intention at this time of doing so. There is  
 09:28 17 nothing I'm aware of that I would be doing.  
 09:28 18 Q At this point in time do you anticipate rendering  
 09:28 19 any additional opinions in this case?  
 09:28 20 A No, I do not.  
 09:28 21 Q If you do any further work or form any further  
 09:28 22 opinions concerning the subject matter of this  
 09:28 23 litigation, please inform your attorneys so that  
 09:28 24 he or she may direct you to amend your report.  
 09:28 25 MR. WOODS: objection.

09:25 1 Q Did you have any phone conversations with your  
 09:25 2 attorneys about this case in preparation for your  
 09:25 3 deposition?  
 09:25 4 A I had a number of telephone calls, by a number of  
 09:25 5 I mean three, four or five with either Dave or  
 09:25 6 Chris, but largely over the logistical details.  
 09:25 7 We didn't discuss substantive things but there  
 09:26 8 were questions of dates and times and flights and  
 09:26 9 when do you need me, those sort of things. So  
 09:26 10 there were a handful of telephone calls with one  
 09:26 11 or the other of them on that type of detail.  
 09:26 12 Substantive conversations we had the two meetings  
 09:26 13 that I mentioned to you.  
 09:26 14 Q Was any correspondence, whether it be paper or fax  
 09:26 15 or electronic E-mails, exchanged between you and  
 09:26 16 your attorneys in preparation for this deposition?  
 09:26 17 MR. WOODS: objection.  
 09:26 18 A I do not recall any correspondence on any  
 09:26 19 substantive issue. There were a couple of E-mails  
 09:26 20 pertaining to flights and travel arrangements and  
 09:26 21 things of that sort. I had an electronic ticket  
 09:26 22 by definition that came by E-mail.  
 09:26 23 Q Earlier you said that you spent about 15 hours  
 09:27 24 total preparing for this case?  
 09:27 25 A Maybe it was 10, maybe it was 16, you know.

09:28 1 MS. MOLTZEN: I would like to take a  
 09:28 2 break.  
 09:28 3 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record.  
 09:28 4 The time is 9:24 AM.  
 09:28 5 (Short recess was taken.)  
 09:38 6 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Back on the record.  
 09:38 7 The time is 9:34 AM.  
 09:38 8 Q Dr. Ludmerer, while we were on the break your  
 09:38 9 attorney handed me a deposition that he hadn't  
 09:38 10 provided to the United States before in the case  
 09:38 11 of Harvey versus ABB LUMMUS, L-u-m-m-u-s, Global,  
 09:38 12 Inc. It was deposition testimony that you gave on  
 09:38 13 May 13 of this year. Do you remember this case?  
 09:39 14 A I did give a deposition in May of this year. If I  
 09:39 15 did not recognize its absence from this list you  
 09:39 16 showed me yesterday, then I apologize. But it is  
 09:39 17 correct that I did give a deposition in May of  
 09:39 18 this year for the Harvey case was an individual  
 09:39 19 smoker case.  
 09:39 20 Q So now I believe we have all 14 cases to the best  
 09:39 21 of our knowledge?  
 09:39 22 A To the best of our knowledge. That includes the  
 09:39 23 two cases from the early, I call it the early  
 09:39 24 period, and then 12 depositions or trials from  
 09:39 25 1997 through the present.

Page 281

09:39 1 Q Why did you start testifying again after the early  
 09:39 2 period?  
 09:39 3 A Well, there are two dimensions to that. Number 1  
 09:39 4 is I did not immediately start testifying because  
 09:40 5 the first time that I was contacted about a case  
 09:40 6 and maybe even the second time I declined because  
 09:40 7 I was too busy with other projects. But then the  
 09:40 8 chief reason is that things were very quiet at  
 09:40 9 that time in tobacco litigation. I hadn't heard  
 09:40 10 from them. I didn't have any contact with  
 09:40 11 representatives of the defense for roughly six  
 09:40 12 years.  
 09:40 13 So when they contacted me again, the issues  
 09:40 14 were very similar as they were before and I felt  
 09:40 15 that again the same tension we discussed  
 09:40 16 yesterday; on the one hand a very firm conviction  
 09:40 17 that smoking is hazardous and causes cancer and  
 09:40 18 other diseases, a desire that everyone in the  
 09:40 19 world would stop smoking tomorrow; but at the same  
 09:41 20 time the same advocacy of history as a field and  
 09:41 21 having the historical events correctly delineated.  
 09:41 22 There were witnesses -- there were claims, I  
 09:41 23 should say, in some of those other cases that were  
 09:41 24 quite false, fictitious in terms of the scientific  
 09:41 25 aspect of the story. So for the same reason --

Page 282

09:41 1 and I consulted leaders of Washington University  
 09:41 2 again and reviewed the issues with them. For the  
 09:41 3 same reasons that I agreed to participate in the  
 09:41 4 late eighties, I agreed to participate again when  
 09:41 5 I had the time, only when I had the time, in some  
 09:41 6 of these more recent cases.  
 09:42 7 But the chief reason that for six or seven  
 09:42 8 years there is no involvement, apparently nothing  
 09:42 9 was happening, at least nothing that they needed  
 09:42 10 me for. I was not contacted at all by any of the  
 09:42 11 legal firms representing the defense. I certainly  
 09:42 12 had no wish or inclination of my own to contact  
 09:42 13 them so we went our merry ways.  
 09:42 14 MS. MOLTZEN: I want to put on the  
 09:42 15 record the United States reserves its right to  
 09:42 16 depose Dr. Ludmerer if it finds anything in this  
 09:42 17 deposition in Harvey versus ABB LUMMUS.  
 09:42 18 MR. WOODS: I recognize your reservation  
 09:42 19 of rights. Whether you have the rights is another  
 09:42 20 thing.  
 09:42 21 Q Have you prepared any charts or exhibits for this  
 09:43 22 case?  
 09:43 23 A No, I have not.  
 09:43 24 Q In the four trials that you have testified in,  
 09:43 25 five trials that you testified in, did you prepare

Page 283

09:43 1 any demonstrative exhibits for those trials?  
 09:43 2 A In a couple of the cases there were  
 09:43 3 demonstratives. I don't have them but there were  
 09:43 4 demonstratives in a couple of cases.  
 09:43 5 Q Do you remember what those demonstrative exhibits  
 09:43 6 were?  
 09:43 7 A Not precisely. There was a demonstrative that I  
 09:43 8 recall that summed up the principles of how one  
 09:43 9 goes about doing the history of medicine. We  
 09:43 10 talked about those things yesterday,  
 09:44 11 comprehensiveness, fairness, looking at all of the  
 09:44 12 evidence, the evolutionary nature of medical  
 09:44 13 knowledge, things of that sort, avoiding  
 09:44 14 hindsight. So there was one demonstrative that  
 09:44 15 listed those things as bullet points. I recall a  
 09:44 16 demonstrative that showed competing explanations  
 09:44 17 for the cause of lung cancer circa '53 and '54.  
 09:44 18 Exactly the things that we discussed yesterday,  
 09:44 19 tobacco number 1, a genetic cause, radiation,  
 09:44 20 pollution, a few other possibilities, including  
 09:44 21 other, including the idea, including the  
 09:44 22 possibility that none of the things we were  
 09:44 23 presently looking at would be bear out to be the  
 09:44 24 cause and would have to keep doing work.  
 09:44 25 There was a demonstrative showing how new

Page 284

09:45 1 work continued to be done; that the growing  
 09:45 2 evolving consensus and the types of work that were  
 09:45 3 done in the mid fifties and late fifties and early  
 09:45 4 sixties to help lead to the consensus. I'm  
 09:45 5 speaking from memory. But these were the sorts of  
 09:45 6 things that were --  
 09:45 7 Q In one of the trial transcripts that I read, and I  
 09:45 8 believe it was Boeken, am I saying that right  
 09:45 9 B-o-e-k-e-n?  
 09:45 10 A I think so.  
 09:45 11 Q There was a demonstrative evidence, exhibit, that  
 09:45 12 I believe was titled Controversies Regarding Lung  
 09:45 13 Cancer and Smoking, 1954 to '64. And from the  
 09:45 14 testimony it sounded to me like number 1 was  
 09:45 15 controversy among epidemiologists, number 2 was  
 09:45 16 controversy among statisticians, and number 3 was  
 09:45 17 epidemiologists versus experimentalists. Did that  
 09:45 18 demonstrative exhibit reflect your discussion  
 09:46 19 yesterday about the disputes between those groups?  
 09:46 20 A Yes, it did. Substantively those topics were part  
 09:46 21 of our conversation yesterday, and we are talking  
 09:46 22 mid fifties, particularly, though it continues  
 09:46 23 through the Surgeon General's report. But there  
 09:46 24 were disagreements within the epidemiologists as  
 09:46 25 we discussed; less over the validity of

09:46 1 epidemiology, less over the issue of does  
 09:46 2 cigarette smoking cause lung cancer, more over the  
 09:46 3 issue of proportion. With the majority of  
 09:46 4 epidemiologists saying that lung cancer is the  
 09:46 5 main cause; environment, pollution, things of that  
 09:46 6 sort are the minor cause, but there were  
 09:46 7 epidemiologists. The most notable was Hueper who  
 09:47 8 was a chief epidemiologist at the National Cancer  
 09:47 9 Institute so we are not talking about a minor  
 09:47 10 figure, who was of the other view, cigarette  
 09:47 11 smoking is a factor, but a minor factor. A major  
 09:47 12 factor has to would with atmosphere, environment  
 09:47 13 and pollution.  
 09:47 14 Actually that debate continues through the  
 09:47 15 Surgeon General's report and the Surgeon General  
 09:47 16 discusses this and draws the conclusion that the  
 09:47 17 other epidemiologists were correct, Hueper was  
 09:47 18 wrong, cigarette smoking was the major factor;  
 09:47 19 environment, pollution as Hueper suggested were  
 09:47 20 factors but minor. Then there was very, and I  
 09:47 21 think ultimately more powerful criticisms that  
 09:47 22 came from the statisticians themselves, Fisher and  
 09:47 23 Berkson. Epidemiology is an applied science and  
 09:47 24 is filled out of the work of basic statistics in  
 09:47 25 terms of the mathematical tools. And the

09:49 1 stand with it, the creation of a new science.  
 09:49 2 I believe that third was the most important  
 09:49 3 issue at all at the time. And those things -- I  
 09:49 4 will trust you when you say there was an exhibit,  
 09:49 5 I don't remember exactly which trials had exhibits  
 09:49 6 and which didn't and what they said. Certainly  
 09:49 7 the exhibit that you describe incorporates those  
 09:49 8 concepts that I have reviewed now and that we  
 09:49 9 discussed yesterday.  
 09:49 10 MS. MOLTZEN: Thank you. The United  
 09:49 11 States has no more questions for Dr. Ludmerer.  
 09:49 12 Off the record.  
 09:50 13 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: Going off the record.  
 09:50 14 The time is 9:45 AM.  
 09:51 15 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: We are back on the  
 09:51 16 record. The time is 9:46 AM.  
 09:51 17 MR. WOODS: I have no questions.  
 09:51 18 MS. MOLTZEN: The United States does  
 09:51 19 want to put on the record that the United States  
 09:51 20 used 7 hours and 16 minutes for the deposition of  
 09:51 21 Dr. Ludmerer.  
 09:51 22 MR. JORDAN: I have no questions.  
 09:51 23 THE VIDEOGRAPHER: This concludes the  
 09:51 24 deposition. We are going off the record at 9:46  
 25 AM.

09:48 1 criticisms of leading statisticians about bias and  
 09:48 2 the studies not being properly designed, the data  
 09:48 3 not being properly analyzed, populations of  
 09:48 4 patients not being representative, these types of  
 09:48 5 criticisms as Berkson and Fisher made in the mid  
 09:48 6 and late fifties and early sixties, those worry  
 09:48 7 people and engendered responses. And that's also  
 09:48 8 continued through the Surgeon General's report.  
 09:48 9 Then lastly, again we discussed this  
 09:48 10 yesterday, an issue that I think was the most  
 09:48 11 important issue of all, the most powerful issue of  
 09:48 12 all is this whole issue of world view, how does  
 09:48 13 one in medicine demonstrate something to be a  
 09:48 14 cause, what do we mean by cause and what nature of  
 09:48 15 proof do we have to have. Do we continue to  
 09:48 16 insist on having experimental proof as we  
 09:48 17 traditionally have done in medicine, or, in the  
 09:49 18 absence of definitive experimental proof can we by  
 09:49 19 inference draw conclusions about causality from  
 09:49 20 other types of data. And that world view issue I  
 09:49 21 think was really the heat of it. That's why in my  
 09:49 22 opinion we are talking about a paradigm shift, a  
 09:49 23 classic scientific revolution, one world view  
 09:49 24 arising to stand with -- I won't say replace  
 09:49 25 another, we still believe in experiments -- but to

1 (Witness excused.)  
 2  
 3  
 4 KENNETH LUDMERER  
 5 Subscribed and sworn to before me this  
 6  
 7 day of ,  
 8  
 9  
 10 NOTARY PUBLIC  
 11  
 12  
 13 My commission expires:  
 14  
 15 UNITED STATES OF AMERICA -vs- PHILIP MORRIS, INC.,  
 16 et al.  
 17  
 18  
 19  
 20  
 21  
 22  
 23  
 24  
 25

CERTIFICATE

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25

STATE OF MISSOURI )  
                          ) ss.  
COUNTY OF JACKSON )

I, ALISON A. TRACY, a Notary Public and Certified Shorthand Reporter, do certify that pursuant to Notice, at the offices of the United States Attorney, 400 East Ninth Street, Fifth Floor, in the City of Kansas City, in the County of Jackson and State of Missouri,

KENNETH LUDMERER

came before me, was duly sworn to testify the whole truth of his knowledge of the matters in controversy aforesaid, was examined and his examination then written in stenotype by me and afterward typed, and subscribed by the witness as hereinbefore set out, on the day in that behalf aforesaid; and said deposition is herewith returned.

I further certify that I am not counsel, attorney or relative of either party, or clerk or stenographer of either party or of the attorney of either party, or otherwise interested in the event of this suit.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, I have hereunto set my seal at my office in said County and State, this        day of                   , 2002.

My Commission expires April 26, 2006.

ALISON A. TRACY, CCR #554